Page 1

CAUSE NO. DF-13-06713

IN THE INTEREST OF

* IN THE DISTRICT COURT

*

L.L.C., IV

* 256TH JUDICIAL DISTRICT

*

A CHILD

* DALLAS COUNTY, TEXAS

ORAL DEPOSITION OF

JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC

OCTOBER 29, 2019

VOLUME 1 OF 1

ORAL DEPOSITION OF JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC, produced as a witness at the instance of the Petitioner, and duly sworn, was taken in the above-styled and -numbered cause on the 29th day of October, 2019, from 10:32 a.m. to 5:36 p.m., before Amy Massey, CSR in and for the State of Texas, reported by machine shorthand, at the Criminal District Attorney's Offices, Administration Building, Fifth Floor, 411 Elm Street, in the City of Dallas, County of Dallas, State of Texas, pursuant to the Texas Rules of Civil Procedure and the provisions stated on the record or attached hereto.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

817-447-6721

		Page 2
1	APPEARANCES	
2	FOR THE PETITIONER, LAURISTON LEE CROCKETT, III:	
3	MR. RANDY J. ESSENBURG	
4	Attorney at Law 4230 Lyndon B. Johnson Freeway Suite 320	
5	Dallas, Texas 75244 972-789-1484	
6	randy@randylaw.com	
7	FOR THE RESPONDENT, NIKKI NGO:	
8	MS. KRIS BALEKIAN HAYES MR. JUSTIN WHIDDON	
9	Balekian Hayes, PLLC 4144 North Central Expressway	
10	Suite 1200 Dallas, Texas 75204	
11	214-828-2800 kris@bh-pllc.com	
12	jwhiddon@bh-pllc.com	
13	FOR THE WITNESS, JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC:	
14	MR. EARL S. NESBITT Assistant District Attorney	
15	Civil Division Criminal District Attorney's Office	
16	Dallas County, Texas Administration Building	
17	411 Elm Street Fifth Floor	
18	Dallas, Texas 75202 214-653-7358	
19	Earl.Nesbitt@dallascounty.org	
20	Algo Drogont:	
21	Also Present:	
22	Mr. Robert Cottingham	
23	Mr. Mario Zelaya	
24		
25		
45		

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

	Page	3
1	INDEX	
2	PAGE	
3		
4	Appearances	
5	Stipulations	
6	JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC	
7	Examination by Mr. Essenburg 7	
8	Examination by Mr. Nesbitt	
9	Further Examination by Mr. Essenburg 284	
10	Signature and Changes	
11	Reporter's Certificate	
12		
13		
14		
15		
16		
17		
18		
19		
20		
21		
22		
23		
24		
25		

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

				:	Page 4
1			EXHIBIT INDEX		
2	DEPOSIT	TOM.	DESCRIPTION	PAGE	
	EXHIBIT			PAGE IARKED/IDENTIFI	ED
3	EXIITDII	=	Pi	IAKKED/ IDENIIF I	ا مق
	NIIMBER	1 Cro	ckett Social Study	10	
4	NONDER	1 010	Robert	10	
5	NUMBER	102	Subpoena for Witness	9	
	IVOIABLIC	102	Deposition/Subpoena Duces Tec	_	
6			Deposition, suspectia baces rec	, am	
	NUMBER	104	March 27, 2019, Letter	39	
7	IVOTIBLIC	101	to Mr. Ramon de Jesus	3,7	
,			Rodriquez from		
8			Dr. Jeffrey C. Siegel, Ph.D.,		
			ABPP		
9					
	NUMBER	105	Email String Regarding	253	
10			"Your Continued Alienation"		
11	NUMBER	106	May 21, 2019, Letter	147	
			to Jennifer Frendle, Vickie		
12			M. Alexander, and Rochelle		
			Ritzi from Randy J.		
13			Essenburg		
14	NUMBER	107	Business Records Affidavit	32	
15	NUMBER	108	Audio Transcription from	135	
			January 12, 2019		
16			,		
	NUMBER	111	Excerpts from Shared	260	
17			Physical Custody: Does		
			It Benefit Most Children?		
18					
	NUMBER	112	August 14, 2019, Letter	260	
19			Jennifer Frendle from		
			Randy J. Essenburg		
20			_		
	NUMBER	119.1	Photograph of Bong	28	
21			-		
	NUMBER	119.2	Photograph of Bottle	28	
22					
	NUMBER	119.3	Photograph of Pills	28	
23			and Pill Bottles		
24	NUMBER	120.1	Photograph of Bare	78	
			Back		
25					

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

817-447-6721

			1
			Page 5
1		EXHIBIT INDEX	
2	DEPOSITION	DESCRIPTION	PAGE
	EXHIBIT		MARKED/IDENTIFIED
3			
5	NUMBER 120.2	Photograph of Bare Arm and Stomach	78
5	NUMBER 120.3	Photograph of Bare	78
6	NUMBER 120.5	Back	70
7	NUMBER 8.4	Photograph of Bare Back	78
8			
9	NUMBER 126	Incident Report Regarding Indecency With a Child Exposure	29
10		-	
	NUMBER 127	Allegation Detail from	121
11		Intake Report of Child Protective Services	
12			
13	NUMBER 129.1	Photographs of Two People on Bed	116
14	NUMBER 129.2	Photograph of Two People On Chair	116
15			
	NUMBER 129.3	Photograph of Three	116
16		People on Couch	
17	NUMBER 130	October 9, 2017, Letter to Justin Whiddon from	239
18		Randy J. Essenburg Regarding Out of Pocket	
19		Medical	
20	NUMBER 132	Rule 11 Agreement	198
21	NUMBER 137	HP DPS Case Report	148
		Summary from Highland	
22		Park Department of Public Safety	
23			
24	NUMBER 139	Medical Center of Plano Emergency Report of	149
25		Three Views of the Left Elbow	
Ц			

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

817-447-6721

			Page 6
1		EXHIBIT INDEX	
2	DEDOCITION		DAGE
۷	DEPOSITION EXHIBIT	DESCRIPTION	PAGE MARKED/IDENTIFIED
3			
4	NUMBER 144	July 27, 2017, Letter to Mr. Crockett from	103
5 6		Scott Santarosa, Provincial, with Standards of Conduct Attached	L ,
7	NUMBER 146	Subpoena for Witness	8
8	NOMBER 140	Deposition/Subpoena Duces Tecum	Ü
9	NUMBER 178	October 30, 2018,	37
10		Letter to Whom It May Concern from Art G.	
11		Arauzo, MD	
12			
13			
14			
15			
16			
17			
18			
19			
20			
21			
22			
23			
24			
25			

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

		Page 7	
1	(All exhibits, except for Number 1, marked		
2	prior to the deposition commencing.)		
3	(On the record at 10:32 a.m.)		
4	MR. ESSENBURG: My name is Randy Essenburg,		
5	attorney for Lauriston Crockett. For the record, present		
6	today are Jennifer Frendle and her the DA's office		
7	representing her, Mr. Earl Nesbitt; and Ms. Kris Balekian		
8	Hayes; and Rob Cottingham; my employee, Mario Zelaya. Not		
9	present	is Vickie Alexander.	
10		EXAMINATION	
11	BY MR. E	SSENBURG:	
12	Q.	Jennifer, you understand we're on the record?	
13	Α.	Yes.	
14	Q.	Please state your name for the record, please.	
15	Α.	Jennifer Frendle.	
16	Q.	And you're here pursuant to a notice of	
17	depositi	on?	
18	Α.	Correct.	
19	Q.	And you understand, then, that this deposition is	
20	being ta	ken under oath, under penalty of perjury?	
21	Α.	Yes.	
22	Q.	That it's just as if you were before the judge and	
23	jury?		
24	Α.	Correct.	
25	Q.	If you were to lie under oath, that criminal	

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 8

- 1 charges could be filed against you?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. Any reason you cannot understand the questions
- 4 here today?
- 5 A. No.
- 6 Q. Are you under the influence of any medication,
- 7 drugs, or alcohol?
- 8 A. No.
- 9 Q. Can we have an agreement that if you don't
- 10 understand my questions, that you can ask me to rephrase it
- 11 or restate it so that you do understand the questions and
- 12 that I can clarify them?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. The court reporter cannot take down uh-huh or
- 15 huh-uh. If you can just say yes or no, that would be
- 16 helpful for her.
- 17 A. I will.
- 18 Q. You are obligated, under the Rules, to provide
- 19 complete answers, as best you can. If you don't answer a
- question, I can object to you being nonresponsive to the
- 21 question.
- 22 You understand that?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. We had -- let me show you what's marked as
- 25 Petitioner Exhibit 146, which I've given you a copy of.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 9 You're here pursuant to that notice of deposition and 1 2 subpoena? This says Petitioner's Exhibit 102 --3 Α. I'm sorry. Q. -- the one you handed me. 6 I'm sorry. Is that -- I'm sorry, let me give you a different one. It's the same thing, just with a 8 different date. 9 Α. Correct. 10 And you were to bring certain documents with you that were -- that were not part of the -- your social 11 12 study, your custody evaluation. Did you bring anything 13 today pursuant to the deposition notice? 14 I have --Α. 15 MR. NESBITT: I have provided those via email. 16 17 MR. ESSENBURG: You did? When did you do that? 18 19 MR. NESBITT: Last night. 20 MR. ESSENBURG: Last night? 21 MR. NESBITT: Yes. 22 MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. And can you tell me 23 what they are? I haven't seen it. 24 MR. NESBITT: 434 pages Bates labeled.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

They're the -- the documents responsive to the subpoena

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

25

Page 10 1 duces tecum. 2 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Other than -- Jennifer, 0. I've given you what I'll mark -- let's mark this 3 Petitioner's Exhibit 1. 4 5 MR. ESSENBURG: Can we do that? 6 MR. NESBITT: You want to mark this whole --MR. ESSENBURG: Yes. 8 (Exhibit 1 marked.) 9 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- and represent to you that Q. 10 is our printout of your electronic version of what you sent 11 to us. 12 So have you looked at it? 13 Α. Yes. Does it reasonably appear to be the electronic 14 version of what you sent to us? 15 16 Α. Yes. 17 And so that one has 403 pages, so you added 33 pages or so, something -- or 30 pages to -- above and 18 19 beyond that? MR. NESBITT: No. This is her evaluation 20 21 report. 22 MR. ESSENBURG: Yes. 23 THE WITNESS: And the attachments. 24 MR. NESBITT: We provided an additional 25 434 pages --

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

	Page 11
1	MR. ESSENBURG: Oh, an additional?
2	MR. NESBITT: in addition to this.
3	We did not provide this again
4	MR. ESSENBURG: I got you.
5	MR. NESBITT: since you already got it.
6	MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. So this
7	MR. NESBITT: Did you need us to send that?
8	MR. ESSENBURG: No, no, no.
9	MR. NESBITT: Okay.
10	MR. ESSENBURG: We talked about that.
11	Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So essentially there's
12	800-and-some-odd pages that are now produced; is that
13	correct?
14	A. Yes.
15	Q. And the extra 400 pages you sent last night, being
16	October 28th
17	A. Correct.
18	Q 2019?
19	And these you produced back in, what was it,
20	July or August?
21	A. July.
22	Q. July of 2019.
23	What is it that you provided extra 400 pages
24	of that you didn't provide in July of 2018?
25	A. My notes; documents, such as the releases that the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 12

- 1 parties signed; there was duplicate information that is
- 2 also included in the attachments but was given to me
- 3 several times; there were various court orders provided to
- 4 me by the parties.
- 5 I don't recall what else.
- 6 Q. Okay.
- 7 A. It is my entire file.
- 8 Q. Okay. Did you provide any communications between
- 9 you and Dr. Jeff Siegel?
- 10 A. I -- in the secondary email was a copy of his
- 11 child custody evaluation from 2013. That was the only
- 12 communication I received from him.
- 13 Q. So you had that as -- you had your -- as part of
- 14 your, let's call it, July 2019 publication, some
- 15 information from Jeff Siegel?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. Did you provide information in your October 2018
- 18 publication that was not part of your July 2018?
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. And what was that?
- 21 A. That was the copy of his custody evaluation from
- 22 2013.
- 23 Q. You didn't have that before making the
- 24 recommendation?
- 25 A. I did, but I included it in -- under the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 13 1 subsection of "attached but" -- I mean, "read but not 2 attached" --Q. 3 Okay. Α. -- to the --So you did have it before you made the publication 0. 6 of your July 2018 (sic) custody evaluation? Α. Yes. 8 Q. Okay. Did you have --9 Α. It's July 2019. Sorry, July 2019. 10 Q. Did you have any additional notes or contact 11 12 information that you provided in October of 2019 from Rochelle Ritzi? 13 14 Possibly emails. I don't recall. Α. So you may or may not have; you're not sure? 15 What I believe was in there were emails between 16 17 the parties and Rochelle Ritzi that she forwarded to Vickie Alexander and I. 18 19 Did you ever put those in the July 2019 20 publication of what you sent to us? 21 Α. No. 22 Did you have them in -- at the time, in July of 23 2019? 24 Yes. Everything that was in the October 28th Α. 25 email to you were things that I had at the time I wrote the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 14 1 report --2 0. Okay. -- but decided not to include as an attachment to 3 4 what I mailed out to everyone. 5 But I read it. All of it. 6 Q. Okay. It wasn't attached. Α. 8 Did she provide -- did Rochelle Ritzi provide you a -- your form filled out that you had sent to her? 10 Α. No. And do you know any reason why she wouldn't have 11 Q. done that? 12 13 Α. No. So all she did was email you and talk with you? 14 Q. 15 Α. Yes. And how many times did you talk with Rochelle 16 Q. 17 Ritzi? I believe twice. 18 Α. 19 Q. For what period of time? 20 Probably 15 minutes or so each time. Α. 21 0. Okay. So email -- a couple of emails? Bunch of emails? 2.2 23 Α. It was the same email forwarded with comments by

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

the -- Rochelle. It was the same email from the parents

sent a few times with comments by Vickie Alexander or

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

24

25

Page 15

- Rochelle Ritzi regarding the conflict between the parents. 1
- 2 Did you ask her to fill out the form and send it 0.
- to you, that you normally do for a child's therapist? 3
- 4 Α. Yes.
- And your position is you don't know why she didn't Q.
- 6 complete that?
- No, I don't. Α.
- 8 Q. Did you have any information from a therapist
- named Guy Chandler? 9
- 10 I requested a form, I believe. That was one of
- the things I did not receive back. 11
- 12 So you requested a form of a second child 0.
- 13 therapist, Guy Chandler, and you didn't receive any form
- back from them? 14
- 15 Α. Correct.
- Did you call them? 16 Q.
- 17 Α. No.
- And why is that? 18 Q.
- I didn't think it was pertinent. 19 Α.
- 20 You didn't think the information that -- Guy Q.
- 21 Chandler, a child's therapist, was pertinent?
- 22 Α. It may --
- 23 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 24 Α. It may have been.
- 25 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Did you receive any Q.

Amy Massey & Associates

Page 16

- 1 information or communications from the amicus attorney,
- 2 Vickie Alexander?
- 3 A. I spoke with her again in the context of the email
- 4 chain between the parents. There were a couple of emails
- 5 regarding that issue. And then a few times after a
- 6 hearing, she or one of the other attorneys would come down
- 7 to just let me know what the result of the hearing was.
- 8 Q. Was there anything -- did you produce all your
- 9 communications with Vickie Alexander in your subsequent
- 10 October 2019 publication?
- 11 A. The emails, yes.
- 12 Q. And did you make notes of any phone conferences
- 13 anywhere?
- 14 A. No.
- 15 Q. Okay. And the phone conferences with Vickie
- 16 Alexander, what was the nature of that discussion?
- 17 A. Well, I don't know that I had a phone conference
- 18 with Vickie Alexander.
- 19 Q. Okay. So you just received information about
- 20 results of courts and nothing else?
- 21 A. Correct.
- 22 Q. You didn't call or talk with her?
- 23 A. Not that I recall.
- Q. At any time?
- 25 A. No.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 17

- 1 Q. Did you have any notes or written documents from
- 2 Kathleen Turlington?
- 3 A. I don't know who that is.
- 4 Q. That is the amicus that formerly represented the
- 5 child.
- 6 A. No.
- 7 Q. Were you not aware there was a former amicus
- 8 attorney?
- 9 A. No.
- 10 Q. So you got no information from or didn't even know
- 11 who Kathleen Turlington was, the former amicus; is that
- 12 correct?
- 13 A. Correct.
- MS. HAYES: Objection --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- MS. HAYES: -- form.
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Excuse me.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you have any additional
- 19 information from the CPS worker named Chastity Williams?
- 20 A. Not other than the CPS records, no.
- Q. Okay. The October 2019 publication that you did
- 22 yesterday, did that include any communications with
- 23 Chastity Williams-Bazile, the CPS worker?
- 24 A. No.
- 25 Q. And they were all -- so all your communications or

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

7afecfa5-6c1c-479e-9f3b-acb553a71be6

Page 18

- all the information that you had from her is in what's
- 2 marked as Petitioner's Exhibit Number 1, the custody
- 3 evaluation that you electronically sent to us July of 2019?
- 4 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 5 You can answer.
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Did you ever pick up
- 8 the phone and call her?
- 9 A. No.
- 10 Q. And why is that?
- 11 A. I don't make it a habit to call the CPS workers.
- 12 I rely on the written record.
- 13 Q. Okay. Did you have any notes or communications
- 14 from Ms. Ngo's attorney?
- 15 A. No, not other than she or one of her associates
- 16 telling me the outcome of a hearing --
- 17 **Q.** Okay.
- 18 A. -- at my office.
- 19 Q. So there was no communications other than that?
- 20 A. Not that I recall.
- 21 Q. And that would include Ms. Hayes sitting here
- 22 today and/or Justin Whiddon?
- 23 A. Correct.
- Q. Did you ever have any written or verbal
- 25 communications with a woman named Mary Lee Taylor, the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 19 1 former nanny? 2 Α. I received a written -- I believe it was a personal reference form or a letter from her that I 3 4 included in the July 2019 information. Other than the letter that you included in the 0. 6 July 2019 information, did you have any other communications --8 Α. No. -- with her? 9 0. 10 Did you ever pick up the phone and call her? 11 Α. No. 12 Or communicate with her in any other way other 0. than just reading her letter? 13 14 Α. No. Okay. So your entire file consists of the 15 publication that you have there as -- identified as 16 17 Petitioner's Exhibit Number 1 and what you supplemented last night, October 28th of 2019; is that correct? 18 19 Α. Yes. 20 Do you want me to call you Jennifer or --Q. That's fine. 21 Α. 22 -- Ms. Frendle or how --Q. 23 Α. That's fine. 24 -- do you -- however you want to do it? 0.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Jennifer, tell the Court where you work?

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

25

Page 20

- 1 A. Dallas County Family Court Services.
- 2 Q. And how long have you been employed there?
- A. Over 13 years.
- 4 Q. And tell the Court what your education and
- 5 qualifications are.
- 6 A. I have a bachelor's in psychology and a master's
- 7 in educational psychology/community counseling.
- 8 Q. A bachelor's in psychology and what else?
- 9 A. A master's in educational psychology. It's an
- 10 M.Ed.
- 11 Q. Are you a psychologist?
- 12 A. No.
- 13 Q. So what's the difference between your degree and a
- 14 psychologist?
- 15 A. A psychologist is usually a four-year degree, a
- 16 PhD and they can call themselves a psychologist. They
- 17 usually do testing. That's the main difference between how
- 18 they can bill and such.
- 19 Q. Are you able to do testing?
- 20 A. No.
- 21 Q. And you said you worked for Dallas County for the
- 22 last 13 years?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. And do you have any other licenses or
- 25 qualifications to work at the Family Court Services?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

		Page 21
1	Α.	Yes.
2	Q.	And what is that?
3	Α.	I'm a licensed professional counselor with the
4	State of	Texas.
5	Q.	And when were you licensed?
6	Α.	2000.
7	Q.	And when did you get your psychology BA
8	psycholo	gy degree?
9	Α.	That would be 1993.
10	Q.	Is that a three-year or four-year?
11	Α.	Four-year.
12	Q.	Okay. Are you required to do continuing
13	education	n?
14	Α.	Yes.
15	Q.	And did you how many hours a year are you
16	required	to do?
17	Α.	It's now the license is required every two
18	years, s	o it's
19	Q.	Okay.
20	Α.	24 hours for the 2-year period.
21	Q.	So, like, an average of 12 a year?
22	A.	Yes.
23	Q.	Okay. And did you meet those requirements in
24	2018?	
25	Α.	Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 22

- 1 Q. Have you done any family violence training?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. Do you -- how many hours a week do you work at the
- 4 Family Court Services?
- 5 A. Over 40 usually.
- 6 Q. Okay. And how many custody evaluations would you
- 7 say that you have completed, from start to finish?
- 8 A. Over 450.
- 9 Q. Okay. How many hours of family violence training
- 10 have you had in the last 12 months?
- 11 A. We did an 8-hour training, but I believe that was
- 12 2 years ago.
- 13 Q. Okay. Do you have any previous knowledge of
- 14 Ms. Ngo or Mr. Crockett or the attorneys before this case?
- 15 A. No.
- 16 Q. Is there any pecuniary relationship that you have
- 17 either with the attorneys or anybody else associated with
- 18 this case?
- 19 A. No.
- 20 Q. Is there anybody involved in this case that you
- 21 have some sort of family relationship with?
- 22 A. No.
- Q. Under the rules of forensic evaluations, are you
- 24 supposed to treat the father and the mother equally,
- 25 without bias?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 23 1 Α. Correct. 2 Do you feel like you did that? 0. 3 Α. Yes. 4 You published the custody evaluation July 8th of Q. 5 2019; is that correct? 6 Α. Yes. At that time, was there an emergency? Q. 8 MR. NESBITT: Excuse me? Pardon me? 9 didn't hear you. What did you say? 10 MR. ESSENBURG: At that time, was there an 11 emergency. 12 Not that I know of. Α. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Is it fair to say that 13 Pages 1, 2, and 3 of what's been marked as Petitioner's 14 Exhibit Number 1 identified the things that the -- the 15 activities of your custody evaluation, from your contacts 16 17 with people to documents provided to just kind of an outline of what your activities were? 18 19 Α. Yes. And then your October 2019 notes kind of 20 21 supplement or is the more detailed stuff, but it's all 22 incorporated into what you did in Pages 1, 2, and 3? 23 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 24 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You can answer that. 25 Or did you do stuff that's not listed in that

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 24

- 1 Pages 1, 2, and 3 that you did not identify?
- 2 A. No.
- Q. So does Pages 1, 2, and 3 identify all your
- 4 activities in this custody evaluation?
- 5 A. Other than hearings and this deposition, yes.
- 6 Q. Okay. Nothing's been left out?
- 7 A. Not that I know of.
- 8 Q. Okay. Did you omit any conversations with third
- 9 parties?
- 10 A. Not that I know of.
- 11 Q. And that would include any conversations you had
- 12 with Ms. Ritzi or Ms. Alexander or the mother or the
- 13 **father?**
- 14 A. Correct.
- 15 Q. Okay. You did the home -- your -- the home visit
- or your last contact with the father, was that done in
- 17 October 2018?
- 18 A. Correct.
- 19 Q. And was that the last time you saw the father and
- the child together, October 29th of 2018?
- 21 A. I believe so, yes.
- 22 Q. That was 10 months ago from today?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. October, what is this, the 29th --
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 25

- 1 Q. -- of 2019?
- 2 At that time, was there any sort of emergency
- going on between the father and the child in October 29th
- 4 of 2018 --
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- from your perspective?
- 7 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 8 A. Not that I know of.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. You received three
- 10 personal references from the father?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. And did you review -- the father brought in some
- documents, did he not, when you first met him?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. He brought a notebook?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. And did you -- you asked him to take out some of
- 18 the documents and -- out of the notebook and give you kind
- 19 of something different than what he had in his notebook; is
- 20 that correct?
- 21 A. I always ask clients to take out the paper because
- 22 anything they give me has to fit into my Manila folder. So
- 23 I asked him to remove the binder part, and then I believe
- 24 we went through the documents to see what I would -- I
- 25 thought I would need.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 26

- 1 Q. So help me understand. You can't accept documents
- 2 unless they fit in your Manila folder?
- A. Well, I don't need the binder, so I usually take
- 4 the documents and, yes, fit them in my -- in my folder.
- 5 Q. Did you take all the documents that were in his
- 6 notebook and put them, all of them, in your Manila folder?
- 7 A. I don't recall. If he gave them to me, then I
- 8 would have -- they would either be included as an
- 9 attachment in the July 2019 or they would have been read
- 10 but not attached in the documents from October 2019.
- 11 Q. Did you provide a copy of the documents that he
- 12 gave you in your publication of Petitioner's Exhibit
- 13 Number 1 and/or your publication of your documents of
- 14 October 28th, 2019?
- 15 A. Did I provide a list? Is -- I'm sorry, is that --
- 16 Q. No. A copy of them.
- 17 A. A copy of them?
- 18 **Q.** A copy.
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. Okay. Are you aware that he gave you -- he took
- 21 back -- are you sure that you didn't hand him back some
- 22 documents at that time?
- 23 A. I may have.
- Q. Okay. So it's fair to say it's been a while, but
- you may have handed back some documents, may not have

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 27

- 1 handed back some documents; you don't recall one way or
- 2 another?
- 3 A. I usually filter through the documents that
- 4 parties want to give me as to what I think is pertinent to
- 5 the case.
- 6 Q. And what's your criteria in filtering through the
- 7 documents?
- 8 A. Anything that I think is important to the issues
- 9 that have been already presented to me or -- and usually I
- 10 don't accept court orders and things that I'm able to look
- 11 up on my computer. I don't need another copy of those to
- 12 be given to me, so I filter those out.
- 13 Q. Are you able to recall what you filtered out back
- 14 when you first received or he proposed to give you a
- 15 **notebook?**
- 16 A. No.
- 17 Q. Did you ever receive any information from a man
- 18 named Kevin Rachel?
- 19 A. I don't recall.
- 20 Q. Did you ever receive information from a man named
- 21 Tom Lima?
- 22 A. I -- I don't recall.
- 23 Q. So you may or may not have received information
- 24 from Kevin Rachel or Tom Lima; you're not able to say?
- 25 A. Correct.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 28

- 1 Q. Okay. Do you recall receiving photographs from
- when Mr. -- the father brought in his notebook of
- 3 photographs of a bong in the mother's possession?
- 4 A. I don't recall.
- 5 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) When you -- brought by the
- 7 father, you identify in your Petitioner Exhibit Number 1
- 8 updates and -- with attachments. Do you recall ever
- 9 receiving any photographs of drug issues?
- 10 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 11 A. I may have.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Let me show you what's
- 13 marked as 119.1, 119.2, -3 -- and -3 and ask you if you
- 14 recognize that as part of the notebook that he provided --
- 15 documents that he provided you when he handed you the
- 16 notebook?
- 17 A. I don't recall seeing these, no.
- 18 Q. When did you -- when did you have the meeting with
- 19 him when he handed you the notebook?
- 20 A. That likely would have been the individual
- 21 interview, which was the second appointment.
- Q. Can you give me a month, day, and year?
- 23 A. Yes. 6-28-18 is when the father's individual
- 24 appointment was.
- Q. Okay. So that's 6 -- June 28th of 2018, that's

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 29

- when he brought his notebook, to your best recollection?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. And you don't recall receiving that out of his
- 4 notebook?
- 5 A. No, I don't.
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) When I say "that," I mean
- 8 Petitioner's Exhibit 119.1, 119.2, and 119.3.
- 9 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You can --
- 11 A. No.
- 12 **Q.** -- answer.
- Do you recall receiving a police report from
- 14 Mr. Crockett in June of 2018 that was part of his notebook?
- 15 A. Can you be more specific?
- 16 Q. Yes. Let me show you what's marked as Petitioner
- 17 Exhibit 126 and I ask you if you recall receiving that back
- 18 then?
- 19 A. No, I don't recall seeing this.
- 20 Q. Did you ever tell Mr. Crockett that you don't take
- 21 emails?
- 22 A. I usually try not to communicate by email because
- 23 then that makes me print out the documents using the County
- 24 paper. So I usually try to have people bring in physical
- 25 copies to me, so I may have said that, yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 30

- 1 Q. Did you ever tell him, I only work with what's in
- 2 this folder?
- 3 A. I may have.
- 4 Q. Did you accept an article from the mother that was
- 5 identified as Criteria Narcissistic Personality Disorder?
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 MR. ESSENBURG: I'm going to put this as part
- 8 of the deposition, hand the court reporter all these
- 9 exhibits there so you'll get a copy of it.
- 10 MR. NESBITT: Has that been marked as an
- 11 exhibit in deposition.
- MR. ESSENBURG: Petitioner Exhibit 126, yes.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And under the Family Code, if
- 14 you perceive somebody to have a serious mental illness that
- is potentially undiagnosed, are you -- is one of your
- abilities or powers to refer one of the parties to a mental
- 17 health evaluation?
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And did you do that regarding
- 21 Mr. Crockett?
- 22 A. Yes, in my recommendations.
- 23 Q. In your recommendations published July of 2019?
- 24 A. Yes.
- Q. Why didn't you refer him prior to July of 2019?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 31

- 1 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 2 A. Because I didn't collect that data and come to
- 3 that conclusion until I wrote my report.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And when did you write your
- 5 report?
- 6 A. It took me a while to write, so I likely began
- 7 writing it in June of 2019. I don't recall the exact date.
- 8 Q. Okay. So before that time, you had not formulated
- 9 that idea that you -- to potentially refer Mr. Crockett to
- 10 an evaluator for mental illness?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection --
- 12 A. Correct.
- MR. NESBITT: -- to form.
- 14 Sorry.
- 15 THE WITNESS: That's all right.
- 16 A. Correct.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So once you -- so is it one of
- 18 your recommendations now to do that?
- 19 A. Yes, I -- yes.
- 20 O. You received from a licensed counselor an
- 21 evaluation of him, did you not, from -- that he did not --
- 22 was not diagnosed with a narcissistic personality; isn't
- 23 that correct?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 25 A. I don't know to which person you're referring.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 32

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Fair enough.
- 2 Let me show you what's been marked as
- 3 Petitioner Exhibit 107, which is a business records
- 4 affidavit containing the records of a Forrest Macfarlane, a
- 5 counselor. Did you ever receive this that was filed --
- 6 that's been filed with the court and sent to you?
- A. No, I've never seen this.
- 8 Q. Okay. It says that you reviewed -- reviewed --
- 9 MR. NESBITT: Excuse me, Counsel. For the
- 10 record, the business records affidavit is 30 August, 2019.
- 11 The date on the document is 26 August, 2019.
- MS. HAYES: Thank you.
- MR. NESBITT: Sorry.
- MR. ESSENBURG: Okay.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) It says you reviewed the Texas
- 16 Department of Family and Protective Services record.
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. Did you ever review the forensic video by the
- 19 Dallas police on the son's interview of sexual abuse
- 20 allegations?
- 21 A. No. I didn't receive records from the Dallas
- 22 Police Department.
- 23 Q. You never reviewed the video of the forensic
- 24 evaluation?
- 25 A. No.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 33 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 1 2 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ever look at it? 3 Α. No. 4 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 5 Α. No. 6 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you -- are you aware or not 7 aware of -- of what he told the police in the forensic 8 interview? 9 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 10 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 11 Α. No, not specifically. 12 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You did have as part of your 0. 13 custody evaluation, prior to July of 2019, a -- the custody evaluation of Dr. Jeff Siegel; is that correct? 14 15 Α. Yes. And did you read his custody evaluation? 16 17 Α. Yes. And what is your opinion of Dr. Siegel's 18 Q. 19 credentials? MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 20 21 He meets the criteria for someone who can complete 22 a child custody evaluation. 23 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Is he a psychologist? 24 A. I believe so, yes. 25 Q. In your opinion, is he a pretty high-end expert?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 34 1 Α. Yes. 2 Do you -- in your profession, do you-all consider 0. him kind of a top-end psychologist? 3 4 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. Α. Yes. 6 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Regarding the child's former therapist, a Dr. Chandler, it says that you asked for 8 information -- and let me bring that up on the screen for 9 you there -- mental health information from Dr. Chandler 10 for Lauriston, III, and Lauriston, IV. 11 Do you see that? 12 Α. Yes. 13 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You asked for information, but 14 Q. you never received it? 15 16 Α. Correct. 17 Did you ever call him to talk to him? Q. Not that I recall. 18 Α. 19 And never got the records --Q. 20 Α. Correct. -- of Dr. Chandler? 21 Q. 2.2 Α. Correct. 23 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

testified earlier that you never got the form also from

(BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is it fair to say that you

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Q.

24

25

Page 35

- 1 Rochelle Ritzi, the other child therapist?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. And you wrote the -- and published your
- 4 recommendations in July of 2019 without ever receiving that
- 5 form from the child's therapist?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is that correct?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. Did you ever ask the amicus, Vickie Alexander, to
- 10 fill out any form or send it to you?
- 11 A. No.
- 12 Q. And why is that?
- 13 A. That's not standard practice.
- 14 Q. Did you ever talk with her about what her feelings
- 15 are or what her opinion is regarding the parent/child
- 16 relationship between the father and the child?
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. And what was your understanding?
- 19 A. She had concerns about both parents placing the
- 20 child in the middle of the conflict.
- 21 Q. So it wasn't just one parent; it was both parents
- 22 she had concerns about?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. And how did that impact your custody evaluation?
- 25 A. That was in line with what I was also seeing.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 36

- Q. Okay. In your custody evaluation -- and let me --
- on Page 4, you write in there, "The mother states the
- 3 father was afraid of ghosts at the hospital and because of
- 4 his agoraphobia, he would not go to the birth room, which
- 5 was on the sixth floor."
- 6 Did you believe that the -- what the mother
- 7 said about the father, that he had agoraphobia?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. As I stated in my report, I mean, he was diagnosed
- 10 with that, but I did not consider it an important factor
- into what's going on now with the family.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you receive from any
- doctor or psychologist, psychiatrist a diagnosis of that?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 **Q.** And who was that?
- 16 A. In Dr. Siegel's report, he stated that the father
- 17 had been diagnosed by the psychiatrist that both parents
- 18 had seen. I believe it was Art Arauzo.
- THE REPORTER: I'm sorry?
- 20 THE WITNESS: Art, and his last name is
- A-r-a-u-z-o.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And you're looking there at
- 23 one of the pages, is that correct, of Dr. -- for lack of a
- 24 better pronunciation -- Arauzo; is that correct?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 37

- 1 That may not have been -- let's see.
- 2 Q. When you were looking at that page of
- 3 Dr. Arauzo -- let me show you what's marked as Petitioner
- 4 Exhibit 178. Is that a true and correct copy of that being
- 5 part of your social study, what's been identified as
- 6 Petitioner Exhibit 178?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. And isn't it fair to say that Dr. Arauzo said he
- 9 did not have agoraphobia?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So how did you reach the
- 13 opinion that he did have it?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 15 A. Because in Dr. Siegel's report, he spoke to the
- 16 professional, and that professional stated that the father
- 17 had, indeed, been diagnosed with that.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So did you elect to believe
- 19 what Dr. Siegel said versus what Dr. Arauzo said on what's
- 20 marked as Petitioner Exhibit 178?
- 21 A. It --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 23 A. It may have been a different provider that Dr.
- 24 Siegel spoke with. I don't recall the name.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But you chose to believe what

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 38

- 1 Dr. Siegel's -- in his report and his provider; is that
- 2 correct?
- 3 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And you chose not to believe
- 6 Dr. Arauzo, is that correct, on his opinion on what's been
- 7 marked on Petitioner Exhibit 178?
- 8 A. As I mentioned, I didn't comment on or diagnose
- 9 the father with any phobia. As I stated, it was not -- I
- 10 didn't think it was pertinent to the issues I was
- 11 discussing, and so I said I would not make a comment on it.
- 12 Q. So did what's marked as Petitioner's Exhibit 178
- as part of your social study, did that have any impact on
- 14 your custody evaluation?
- 15 A. No.
- 16 Q. Did you feel anything rose to the level that you
- 17 should refer Mr. Crockett to any mental health evaluator?
- 18 A. What time period are we referring?
- 19 Q. When you read the October 30th, 2018, letter from
- 20 Dr. Arauzo or when you read Dr. Siegel's custody evaluation
- 21 that you referred to describing some agoraphobia issues.
- 22 A. No.
- 23 Q. Let me show you here Page 4 of your custody
- 24 evaluation. You wrote, "The mother and father have
- 25 different perspectives about the incident that occurred on

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 39

- 1 April 16th, 2013. The outcome was that the mother was run
- 2 over by her vehicle."
- 3 Do you recall that?
- A. Yes.
- 5 Q. And you received the letter from Dr. Siegel, did
- 6 you not, regarding that issue?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. Did you read it?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. Let me show you what I've identified as
- 11 Petitioner's Exhibit 104. Is this a true and correct copy
- of the letter that you received from Dr. Siegel?
- 13 A. Yes, it appears to be.
- 14 Q. And would you agree with me that Dr. Siegel
- 15 believed that she was committing perjury and she was lying
- 16 about that incident?
- MS. HAYES: I'm sorry --
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 MS. HAYES: -- Counselor, can I see a copy of
- 20 that, please?
- 21 MR. ESSENBURG: It's in the social study,
- 22 just so you know, part of the custody evaluation.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you agree with that?
- MR. NESBITT: Hold on until the exhibit gets
- 25 back to you.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 40 1 THE WITNESS: Okay. 2 MS. HAYES: March 27. 3 If we could just have dates on the record 4 too, that would be great, Randy. 5 MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah. 6 THE WITNESS: Okay. MR. ESSENBURG: Be glad to. 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Petitioner's Exhibit 104, 9 Dr. Siegel's letter, is dated March 27th, 2019. 10 Do you have that -- this Petitioner 11 Exhibit 104 is part of your custody evaluation records; is it not? 12 13 Α. Correct. 14 So you had it before you wrote up the evaluation? 15 Α. Yes. 16 Q. And tell the Court -- am I reading his letter 17 correctly dated March 27th, 2019 -- this is his affidavit, is it not, that you received? 18 19 Α. Yes. 20 And did he say, "As part of the evaluation, I 21 interviewed Ms. Ngo regarding an April 16, 2013, incident 22 when she was injured from being run over by her car; it was 23 my understanding from the interviews that Mr. Crockett was not involved in the accident"? 24 25 Α. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 41 1 Q. Did you read that? 2 Α. Yes. Before you made the recommendations? Q. Α. Yes. And did -- tell me if I'm reading this correctly. Q. 6 Part of Petitioner Exhibit, Exhibit 104, he states, "I have been made aware that Ms. Ngo recently claimed that 8 Mr. Crockett pulled her from the car and he ran over her; 9 this is inconsistent with the information and description 10 she provided to me during the interviews during the custody evaluation." 11 12 Did you read that? 13 Α. Yes. He states that, "The allegations by Ms. Ngo that 14 Mr. Crockett pulled her from the car and ran over her 15 would, in my opinion, have a negative effect on the 16 17 parent/child relationship between father and son and would contribute to alienation." 18 19 Did you read that portion of it? 20 Α. Yes. Yes. 21 Q. Did you believe that? If the child knew --2.2 Α. 23 MR. NESBITT: Objection --A. -- about it, yes. 24 25 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) He states in his Petitioner Q.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 42

- 1 Exhibit 104, "In my opinion, a parent that falsely accuses
- 2 the other parent of such behavior, an attempt to cause
- 3 serious bodily harm is being untruthful; such behaviors are
- 4 very serious and raise significant concerns about the
- 5 parent's ability to serve as the primary parent."
- 6 Do you recall reading that before you wrote
- 7 your recommendations?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. What impact did this letter have on your published
- 10 report of July of 2019?
- 11 A. I read it and considered it, along with the other
- 12 information I received.
- 13 Q. And did it have any impact on your evaluation?
- MS. HAYES: Objection --
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) If so, what?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 17 A. As I mentioned about this incident as well, I was
- 18 not going to make a determination about what happened in
- 19 2013, although I recognize that both parents have vastly
- 20 different versions of this event. I believe both parents
- 21 have made incorrect claims about this event, which is not
- 22 good, but telling the child about it is the -- my issue
- 23 with this incident.
- 24 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you believe Dr. Siegel's
- 25 lying or misrepresenting something in some way?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 43 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 1 2 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 3 Α. No. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So if the mother's version is 4 Q. 5 that the father attempted to kill her by pulling her out of 6 a car and running her over, that wasn't a significant issue 7 for you in your custody evaluation? 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection to form. 9 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 10 Α. Whether or not it happened and how it happened are not my concern because I can't determine that six years 11 12 later. 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) If she was lying to you, would that impact your recommendation? 14 It might. I don't believe she's lying. 15 Α. You believed her? 16 0. 17 I believe that's what she believes. Α. 18 Q. Okay. So you don't know one way or the other, it 19 didn't matter; you looked at other things? 20 Α. Correct. 21 But if you were made aware she was lying, it would 22 have impacted your recommendation? 23 Α. It may have. 24 Are you able to award custody to a liar? 0. 25 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 44

- 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 2 A. I don't -- that's a very broad question. I don't
- 3 know how to answer that.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) If somebody's lying to you
- 5 about all these different things as part of your custody
- 6 evaluation, are you able to disregard the lies and award
- 7 custody to them?
- 8 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 9 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 10 A. It depends on what the other party is doing.
- 11 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So it's possible?
- 12 A. It's possible.
- 13 Q. Did you receive as -- let me see here. Bear with
- 14 me just a moment. You received as part of your records
- 15 actually a police incident report, did you not? It's
- 16 already here, I think, 126. Do you recall this being part
- 17 of your records actually? I think you might have misstated
- 18 that you didn't have that as part of your records, but you
- 19 actually do in your Petitioner Exhibit Number 1.
- 20 A. I don't know where that is. I don't recall seeing
- 21 this.
- 22 Q. You can certainly look for it. I'll represent to
- 23 you that I found it in Petitioner's Exhibit Number 1,
- 24 Deposition Exhibit Number 1.
- 25 Did you read that Petitioner Exhibit --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 45 1 MR. NESBITT: Hold on, Counsel. Why don't 2 you find that, make sure it's as represented. 3 MR. ESSENBURG: Can we go off the record while she looks for that? 4 5 MR. NESBITT: Certainly. 6 (Recess from 11:17 a.m. to 11:23 a.m.) MR. NESBITT: Mr. Essenburg has shown the 8 deponent Petitioner's Exhibit 126. At one point, it was 9 represented that this document was not included in 10 Petitioner's Exhibit 1; another point in the deposition it was represented that it was included in Petitioner's 11 Exhibit 1. I think we have concluded that it is not 12 included in Petitioner's Exhibit 1. If we find it, we will 13 14 again correct the record. 15 Thank you. Go ahead. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Jennifer, did you hear your 16 Q. 17 attorney say that you did not have Petitioner's Exhibit 126 in your record? 18 19 Α. Correct. Yes. 20 And is it fair to say that you also don't have it Q. in your supplemental publication of October of 2019? 21 22 Α. I don't believe so, no. 23 Q. So this would be missing from the information that 24 you received from -- that you had available to you before

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

you made the recommendation; is that correct?

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

25

Page 46 1 MS. HAYES: Objection, form. 2 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 3 Α. Yes. 4 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Let me show you what Q. is -- did you take a look at Petitioner's Exhibit 126, 5 6 then? Α. Briefly. 8 Q. And you see the name up there listed, Burgess? 9 Α. Yes. 10 0. Are you aware that's the forensic evaluator of the -- and a member of the Dallas Police Department 11 12 that did the forensic investigation of the sexual abuse/molestation issues? 13 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 14 15 Α. No, I didn't know that. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And that was part of the 16 Q. 17 temporary orders trial that the parties had in 2018? MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 18 19 Α. No, I didn't know about that. 20 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Were you ever aware 21 from either the mother or the father that, in fact, the police had testified and submitted what's been identified 22 23 as Petitioner Exhibit 126 into the Court's evidence in 2018 24 when they -- when they were fighting over that issue? 25 MS. HAYES: I'm going to --

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 47 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 2 MS. HAYES: -- object to form. 3 And I can't identify on the record how she could answer that question. 4 5 MR. ESSENBURG: That's not a lawful 6 objection. 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You can answer the question, 8 please. 9 Α. No, I didn't know about it. You were aware there was a forensic interview of 10 Ο. the child, is that correct, by CPS and the police? 11 12 MS. HAYES: Object to form. 13 Α. Not directly, no. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You never understood in the 14 entire time you were doing a custody evaluation that this 15 child was being interviewed for possible molestation 16 charges by Uncle Buck? 17 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 18 19 I assumed that there had been a forensic 20 interview, but I didn't know the specifics as the parents didn't tell me that. 21 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ever ask for the 23 police records on that allegation? 24 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 25 Α. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 48 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And does Petitioner 1 Q. 2 Exhibit 126 appear to be part of those police records? 3 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 4 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. Α. 5 Yes. 6 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And it's not part of your 7 records; is that correct? 8 Α. Correct. 9 MS. HAYES: Objection to leading. 10 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would that concern you that you're making recommendations without reviewing the police 11 12 information regarding that allegation? 13 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 14 Α. Possibly, yes. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Could that impact your custody 15 0. evaluation? 16 17 Α. It might. MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 18 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) May I see that, please? (Witness tenders exhibit to Counsel.) 20 Α. 21 You agree with me that Petitioner's Exhibit 126, 22 the offense is indecency with a child --23 MS. HAYES: Objection to --24 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- exposure? 25 MS. HAYES: -- form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 49 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You understand that? 2 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 3 Α. Yes. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And you never got those 4 records? 5 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 7 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 8 Α. I didn't get the forensic interview records, but I 9 got the CPS records in which this case was a part of. 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. MS. HAYES: Randy, while she's not my 11 12 witness, it is concerning to me that we're continuing to talk about documents that haven't been tendered in this 13 case and that I can't ascertain to be true and --14 15 MR. ESSENBURG: That --MS. HAYES: -- correct documents related to 16 17 this case. 18 MR. ESSENBURG: That's a subject of cross, 19 but it's not a proper objection. 20 MS. HAYES: I'm letting you know --21 MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. 2.2 MS. HAYES: -- if you're going to continue 23 going forward under this line of questioning, I'm going to 24 continue objecting to every question as improper. 25 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Read -- tell me, Petitioner's Q.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

817-447-6721

Page 50

- 1 Exhibit 126 states, on July 26th, 2017, "The complainant
- was forensically interviewed and talked about how his
- 3 mother made him take a bath with his uncle; the complainant
- 4 did not give details to explain sexual gratification;
- 5 therefore, recommends this offense be unfounded."
- 6 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you see that, that part of
- 8 the police report?
- 9 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So the allegation -- is it
- 12 your understanding that the allegation by the child was
- 13 that the -- he was -- mother made him take a bath with his
- 14 uncle? That was --
- 15 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- the allegation?
- 18 A. That was the allegation, yes.
- 19 Q. Was that your understanding from the parties?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 21 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Or from the -- from the --
- 22 anybody in the -- any litigant?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 A. The parents stated that there was a CPS case

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 51

- 1 regarding that incident, yes.
- 2 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What did you understand that 0.
- the allegation was against Mr. Buck, from talking to all 3
- 4 the -- whomever you spoke with?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 6 Α. Initially that it began with an allegation of the
- 7 mother biting -- the mother and/or uncle biting the child
- 8 or popping his knuckles, holding him upside down, and that
- 9 it -- later there was a secondary allegation of the uncle
- being in the bathroom with the child when he was bathing. 10
- (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Naked or clothed? 11 Q.
- 12 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 13 Α. There were several pieces of information I
- received and I don't recall who said what, but at some 14
- points it was -- it was unclear. 15
- (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. I'm showing you what's 16 Q.
- 17 marked as Petitioner's Exhibit 126 that are the forensic
- interview notes. Have you ever seen these before or read 18
- 19 these before --
- 20 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 21 MR. NESBITT: Objection --
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- today?
- 23 MR. NESBITT: -- to form.
- 24 Α. No.
- 25 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Why didn't you request the Q.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6721 817-447-6491 FAX

Page 52

- 1 forensic interview by the police before you made your
- 2 recommendation?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 4 A. I did request Dallas Police Department records
- 5 specifically listing the parties and child's name. I have
- 6 never, in my 13 years, received a copy of the forensic
- 7 interview. It's usually not part of the records that they
- 8 allow us to have.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) When you requested it and
- 10 didn't receive it, why didn't you follow up, asking for
- 11 that police report?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 14 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Or did you follow up to ask
- 15 for the police report?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 17 A. I didn't know that there were specific -- I
- 18 assumed there was a forensic interview, but I didn't know
- 19 of its existence specifically, have dates, or other
- 20 information regarding it.
- 21 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So you understood there was a
- 22 forensic interview, and you believed it wasn't necessary to
- 23 chase down that information?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 53

- 1 A. I had the CPS records which listed the information
- 2 as well as the disposition in the case, which is
- 3 information I did receive.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ever have this CPS
- 5 information that was attached to the police report?
- 6 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And that's -- I'm handing you
- 8 what's marked as Petitioner's Exhibit 126 --
- 9 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- the CPS records, Tab
- 11 Number 3.
- 12 A. I don't recall if this case was -- let me see
- 13 here.
- 14 Q. Do you want to take a moment to take a look at
- 15 Petitioner's Exhibit Number 1 to see if it's in your
- 16 records?
- 17 A. Yes.
- MR. ESSENBURG: Let's go off the record and
- 19 give her the opportunity.
- 20 (Recess from 11:32 a.m. to 11:32 a.m.)
- 21 MR. NESBITT: Why don't you repeat your
- 22 question, Counsel.
- 23 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you have the CPS report as
- 24 part of your record that's identified in Petitioner's
- 25 Exhibit 126?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 54

- 1 A. Yes. What I received from CPS was an abbreviated
- 2 form of this call narrative, along with the outcome, as
- 3 part of the records I received.
- 4 Q. So --
- 5 MS. HAYES: Objection, nonresponsive.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- do you have that or have a
- 7 different version of that?
- 8 A. I have a different version of this with the
- 9 information abbreviated --
- 10 **Q.** Okay.
- 11 A. -- and the disposition outcome listed.
- 12 Q. So what's been identified Petitioner's
- 13 Exhibit 126, and you don't really have a copy of that in
- 14 your records?
- 15 A. Not this --
- 16 Q. You have an abbreviated version, not that one?
- 17 A. Correct.
- 18 Q. Okay. Are you aware that in this one, the call
- 19 narrative, that it states that -- and this is an interview
- of Ms. Ngo -- that she was at home and managed to run over
- 21 herself, which she admitted to? Do you see that?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- We're -- Counsel, you're asking her about --
- 25 you're reading from a document that she's never seen

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6721

Page 55 1 before. 2 MR. ESSENBURG: Well, she's got --3 MR. NESBITT: The document speaks for itself, 4 so if you want to -- that's in evidence. If you want to --5 MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah. 6 MR. NESBITT: -- ask her about this --MR. ESSENBURG: But it -- but it's --8 MR. NESBITT: She has not spoken to it. 9 MR. ESSENBURG: I don't know --10 MR. NESBITT: We're spending 30 minutes having you read from a document --11 12 MR. ESSENBURG: I don't know whether --13 MR. NESBITT: -- that she's never seen. 14 MR. ESSENBURG: I don't know if the 15 abbreviated version has that or doesn't have that. MR. NESBITT: But you're asking her about 16 17 this document (indicating). (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. So I'm asking, does 18 0. 19 your abbreviated version have that sentence, in the one 20 that you received? 21 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 22 MS. HAYES: Objection, form. 23 Α. The call narrative is the person who's making the So I have that information; I don't recall if 24 allegation. 25 I have that exact sentence listed.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 56

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So you may or may not have;
- 2 you don't recall?
- A. Correct.
- 4 Q. Did you ever receive any police reports from
- 5 anybody where the father was charged criminally for running
- 6 over the mother?
- 7 A. No.
- 8 Q. Did you ever receive any hospital records that
- 9 evidenced any claim by the mother that the father pulled
- 10 her out of the car and ran over -- had the car run over
- 11 her?
- 12 A. No.
- 13 Q. Part of the -- you received the letter from the
- 14 nanny, did you not?
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. And she was present at the time of the
- 17 running-over incident?
- 18 A. She stated she was, yes.
- 19 Q. And did you ever pick up the phone and call her
- 20 and ask her what her perspective was on the running-over
- 21 incident?
- 22 A. No, because, again, I felt it was so distant in
- 23 the past that I wasn't going to be able to figure out what
- 24 happened, and it wasn't pertinent to what was going on now
- 25 with the child.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 57

- 1 Q. It wasn't pertinent that the father possibly did
- 2 attempted murder of the mother?
- 3 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Or either that or lying?
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 6 A. It was an issue that I was not going to be -- I --
- 7 I was not going to be able to confirm or deny, so I focused
- 8 on how the parents' perspectives about the event relate to
- 9 what's going on now, not the actual event.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did -- you had the nanny's
- 11 email address, did you not?
- 12 A. It may have been on her form.
- 13 Q. Did you email her, asking her about the
- 14 running-over incident?
- 15 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 16 A. No.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) In your opinion, do you
- 18 believe the father pulled her out of the car and caused her
- 19 to be run over?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 21 A. I -- I'm not sure what happened.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So you don't take any
- 23 position, one way or the other?
- 24 A. I -- I believe it was an accident. I don't
- 25 believe it was a intentional harming by either party of the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 58

- 1 mother.
- 2 Q. The mother stated expressly to you that she
- 3 believed the father tried to kill her; did she not?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. How did those two -- how did that impact your
- 6 custody evaluation?
- 7 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 8 A. How did what impact the custody evaluation?
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) The fact that you believed it
- 10 was an accident and she told you, He tried to kill me?
- 11 A. I believe that's the mother's perspective after
- 12 the fact, and that doesn't necessarily impact my study one
- 13 way or the other.
- 14 Q. Okay. Page 11, you describe the mother's concerns
- 15 regarding the father. It's up on the screen there --
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. -- if it's easier for you.
- 18 Pick whichever one you want.
- 19 She believes the father teaches him, the boy,
- 20 to lie; is that correct?
- 21 A. Yes.
- Q. Did you believe the father teaches him to lie?
- 23 A. Not in the way the mother intended that, no.
- 24 Q. Do you believe the father teaches the boy to lie
- 25 in any way?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 59

- 1 A. I don't believe that's what he thinks he's doing.
- 2 Q. You wrote on Page 11 of your custody evaluation --
- 3 and let me see if I can make it easier for you -- "The
- 4 father has psychological issues; he projects his own fears
- onto Logan; elevators, escalators, heights. Now Logan
- 6 says, "I'm afraid of heights." The father is prejudiced
- 7 against blacks. Logan acts like he has Stockholm syndrome;
- 8 he is bound to the father in this way. The father carries
- 9 a gun when Logan is around, all the time. He told Logan
- 10 people would try to snatch him."
- 11 Is that part of the mother's concerns?
- 12 A. Yes.
- 13 Q. Did you believe that the father is a racist?
- 14 A. I don't know that I made that determination or
- 15 not.
- 16 Q. Do you believe it? Do you believe the father is a
- 17 racist?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. I'm not sure I came to a conclusion on that.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. He dated and had a
- 21 child with an Asian woman; is that correct?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. Are you aware he dated a black girl?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 25 A. No.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6721

Page 60

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ever ask him?
- 2 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 3 A. No.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ever ask him if he was
- 5 a racist in some way?
- 6 A. No.
- 7 Q. When she described him in those manners, that he's
- 8 got some psychological issues and prejudiced, in your
- 9 opinion was she putting herself in a superior position of
- 10 truth, that she's not that way and he is?
- 11 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 12 A. Yes, somewhat. Yes.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) I'm better than he is?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 15 A. The -- I believe her intention was more to
- 16 describe things she perceives as making it difficult to
- 17 parent.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Well, she didn't describe
- 19 herself as racist, did she?
- 20 A. No.
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 22 A. No.
- 23 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And she described him as
- 24 racist, didn't she?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 61

- 1 Q. Is one of the symptoms of a narcissistic
- 2 personality that "I'm in a superior position of truth; I'm
- better than the other person"? 3
- 4 Α. Yes.
- Was she doing some of that? 0.
- 6 Α. Yes, she may be.
- On Page 12, you described -- the mother described
- 8 the father as a -- the father is, quote, a con man.
- 9 Do you see that?
- 10 Α. Yes.
- Did you believe that the father's a con man? 11
- 12 That wasn't within the scope of my custody Α.
- 13 evaluation, so I didn't make a determination about that.
- But if he was deceptive, misleading, showing you 14
- one thing, doing another, would -- isn't that kind of what 15
- a con man does, would be concerning from a parenting 16
- 17 standpoint?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 18
- 19 Α. Yes, I did find examples of some of those things.
- 20 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you investigate to see if
- 21 he was a con man, then?
- I -- that would --2.2 Α.
- 23 For example, she stated that he screwed and
- defrauded people for money. 24
- 25 Do you recall that?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 62 1 Α. Yes. 2 Did you investigate that? 0. I think "investigate" would be a strong word. 3 Α. did read documents that said that the father was sued for 4 5 some -- something about his business, breach of contract or 6 something. Did you determine if, in fact, he had screwed 8 anybody out of money? 9 MS. HAYES: Objection, form. 10 Α. No. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Was it your understanding, 11 Q. 12 when she's making these allegation against the father, that she characterizes him as a con man and she is not a con 13 person or conning person? 14 15 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 16 Α. Yes. 17 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Isn't that a superior position Q. that she's taking? 18 19 Α. It may be. 20 Isn't that one of the symptoms of a narcissistic Q. 21 personality? 22 Α. Yes. 23 Isn't she, in her descriptions, maligning the

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

father's character and reputation?

Absolutely.

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Α.

24

25

Page 63

- 1 Q. Did you have concerns that the mother would malign
- 2 the father's character and reputation?
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. How did that -- your opinion of her maligning the
- 5 father's character and reputation impact your custody
- 6 evaluation?
- 7 A. It was -- it's a concern because ultimately it
- 8 leads her to behave in a certain way because of her fears.
- 9 It makes her fearful of the father, which impacts her
- 10 parenting.
- 11 Q. You wrote in there on Page 12 -- and I'll pull
- 12 that up so you can read it easier. "The father owns a
- 13 Corvette, Trans Am, two-door Mercedes, and a Ford truck."
- 14 Do you see that? You can see it up on the
- 15 screen if it's easier for you.
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. It was almost as if -- did you investigate whether
- 18 he, in fact, owns all of those cars?
- 19 A. There -- two of those cars were in the house at
- 20 the time of the home visit, and I had seen a photograph of
- 21 the other car.
- Q. Being parked in somebody's driveway, does that
- 23 mean they own them --
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- in your opinion?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 64 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 1 2 It was in his garage. Α. MR. ESSENBURG: Objection, nonresponsive. 3 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Does that mean, if it's in his 5 garage, that he owns them --6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. Α. 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- in your opinion? 9 Α. I assumed that, yes. Are you aware that the father does not own those 10 0. 11 cars? No. 12 Α. 13 On Page 12 -- let me see if I can highlight that for you there -- you wrote in there, "Since I remembered 14 about the accident I get anxiety when I talk to the father; 15 I believe he pulled me out of the vehicle when it was in 16 17 gear and it ran over me; I'm afraid for Logan to talk back to the father or to have his own voice." 18 19 Do you see that? 20 Α. Yes. 21 Q. Did you believe her? 22 I believe that's her perspective. Α. 23 Q. Do you believe that -- do you have concerns that the father would somehow hurt this child in some way? 24 25 Α. I don't know.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 65

- 1 Q. So if the -- there's either an attempted murder by
- 2 the father or she's lying.
- 3 Would you agree with that?
- 4 A. No.
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You don't believe that those
- 7 are not mutually exclusive?
- 8 A. Correct.
- 9 Q. Okay. What do you believe then? Tell --
- 10 explain -- help me understand.
- 11 A. There's a middle ground in which the mother is not
- 12 outwardly lying. She believes that that's what occurred.
- 13 That doesn't mean that I believe that's what occurred, but
- 14 that's her perspective and that's why it's in the section
- 15 where she's listing her concerns.
- 16 Q. So her description of that, she's legitimately
- 17 fearful of father hurting the child?
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. Do you -- do you believe that to be true?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 21 A. Not because of this incident with the vehicle.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Do you believe this
- 23 child -- this father would hurt this child physically?
- 24 A. I don't know what the father is capable of.
- 25 Q. So he may or may not; you're not able to say?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 66

- 1 A. Correct.
- 2 Q. If she has this attitude that the father has
- 3 the -- right or wrong in her mind, that this father could
- 4 hurt this child, wouldn't that impact her attitude about
- 5 the father?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And do you believe she might
- 9 make decisions to protect this child from the father?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. One way is to keep this child away from the
- 12 father, would it not, to protect him?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. Wouldn't that be a form of alienation?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 16 A. It may be, yes.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me turn your attention to
- 18 Page 13, and I'll put the relevant portion here up on the
- 19 screen so you can read it a little easier. You want to --
- 20 let me see here. There was a dispute about what this boy
- 21 would be called between the mother and a father; is that
- 22 correct?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. Did you ever -- the father wants him to be called
- 25 Lauriston, by his name; and the mother wants him to be

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 67

- 1 called Logan; is that correct?
- 2 A. Yes.
- Q. Did you ever ask this boy what he wanted to be
- 4 called?
- 5 A. I didn't ask him specifically. He told me
- 6 outright.
- 7 Q. What did he say?
- 8 A. "Logan is not my real name; my mom wants me to be
- 9 called that for some reason; I don't like it that much."
- 10 Q. How did that impact your social study when the boy
- 11 tells you that?
- 12 A. Well, I took that into consideration, which is why
- 13 I recommended that, for record's sake, his -- all of his
- 14 documents show his legal name.
- 15 Q. Do you believe if the mother wants to call this
- boy by a name other than his legal name that that's in any
- 17 way a form of alienation?
- 18 A. No. I think that was chosen when he was born as a
- 19 preference.
- 20 Q. The father didn't choose that, did he?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What was the father's position
- 23 about what name his son should be called?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 A. I was told that there was an agreement that the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 68

- 1 child would be named after the father but that she would
- 2 call him Logan.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ask the father if
- 4 there was an agreement to be -- for the boy to be called
- 5 Logan?
- 6 A. He denies that.
- Q. So did he, the father, tell you that he wanted his
- 8 son to be called Lauriston?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. So the mother says there was an agreement; the
- 11 father says there wasn't an agreement, in fact, I wanted
- 12 him called Lauriston?
- 13 Is that your understanding?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. Did you consider that a form of alienation, then,
- 16 if that was the position of the mother?
- 17 A. No. That didn't factor in.
- 18 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 13. I'll put
- 19 it on the screen here so you don't have to search it quite
- 20 as well -- as hard.
- 21 The son told his friends that he's returning
- 22 to Hightower and he "does not want to lie to them because
- 23 it will make them sad." You wrote that as part of your
- 24 report; is that --
- 25 A. Yes.

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 69

- 1 Q. -- correct?
- 2 Α. Yes.
- And tell the Court where you believe, in your 3 Q.
- 4 opinion, the boy wants to go to school?
- I believe he felt like Hightower was where he had 5 Α.
- 6 friends, where he'd been going, and that's where he wanted
- to go.
- 8 Q. Did Lauriston, the son, tell you that he wanted to
- live with his father? 9
- 10 Α. Not outright.
- Did he do it in some other way other than 11 Q.
- 12 outright?
- 13 Α. Yes.
- What did he say? 14 Q.
- He said, Living in -- I'm paraphrasing, but living 15
- in two homes is hard; I only want to live in one. 16
- 17 Q. And was it your understanding he wanted to live
- with his father? 18
- 19 Α. Yes.
- 20 How did that impact your recommendation? Q.
- 21 I took it into consideration, his wishes.
- 2.2 Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 13, a Q.
- 23 different place. I'll kind of highlight this so you don't
- have to hunt it down quite so hard. 24
- 25 You wrote in there on Page 13, he states the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 70

- 1 mother told him, "when you're at your dad's house you can't
- 2 bother me and the same with here." Lauriston reports, "she
- 3 (the mother) made me in trouble because I didn't have my
- 4 phone and I wanted to text my Dad; she was mad and she
- 5 wouldn't let me; she took my phone for one day; Lauriston
- 6 states the father tells him, 'let's call your Mom'."
- Was that information you received as part of
- 8 your custody evaluation?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. Was it your understanding -- and did you get that
- 11 from the mother, or where all did you get that information
- 12 **from?**
- 13 A. This is in the interview with the child.
- 14 Q. Okay. Did you ask the mother about that?
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. And what did she say?
- 17 A. I didn't talk to her directly after I interviewed
- 18 the child, but it was a topic that we discussed. The
- 19 mother's perspective is that they should do parallel
- 20 parenting. In other words, when the child is with her,
- 21 then she parents and there's no communication with the
- 22 father; and then when the child is with the father, he
- 23 parents and there's no communication with the mother.
- Q. Okay. So was it your understanding the mother did
- 25 not want the son to call or text his father during her

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 71

- 1 periods of possession?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. What weight did you give to this in your custody
- 4 evaluation?
- 5 A. That's concerning. I understood the reason why
- 6 that Rochelle Ritzi later recommended the parents to do
- 7 parallel parenting, but it causes conflict for the child
- 8 because he has to live in two separate entities without the
- 9 parents communicating and that's not the ideal situation
- 10 for any child.
- 11 O. Is the mother's attitude that she doesn't want the
- 12 boy calling or texting the father during her periods of
- 13 possession a form of alienation?
- 14 A. No, because she expects the same thing when he's
- 15 with his father, that she will not receive any.
- 16 Q. Is it fair to say that the father did not have the
- same prohibition that the mother had?
- 18 A. Correct.
- 19 Q. So the father's allowing the mother to be called
- and texted, but the mother's not call- -- allowing the son
- 21 to call or text the father?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Was that your understanding?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 72

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And do you consider that a
- 2 form of alienation?
- 3 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 4 A. Again, I think it leads more to the mother's rigid
- 5 way of thinking in that her expectation that was not that
- 6 she would receive preferential treatment, but that she
- 7 would receive the same treatment as far as communication in
- 8 both -- for the child in both homes.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But you were concerned about
- 10 that, were you not?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 14.
- 13 I'll put on there the relevant portion there which states,
- 14 Lauriston states -- asked about his stepfather, Rob,
- 15 Lauriston states, "he's nice but he says my dad bullies
- 16 them, but that is not true; my dad would never do that; he
- 17 states the mother told him that the father bullies her and
- 18 she tried to make me live with her."
- 19 Did you write that in your custody
- 20 evaluation?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 **Q. Page 14?**
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. What weight did you give that statement, that the
- 25 mother told him that the father bullies her? What weight

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 73

- 1 did you --
- 2 A. That's concerning. Again, it's an example of one
- 3 of the parents putting the child -- giving the child
- 4 information that's negative about the other parent, which
- 5 is not good.
- Q. Was the -- when the mother's describing the father
- 7 as bullying her and the stepfather, is that maligning the
- 8 father --
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. -- in your opinion?
- 11 Is that alienating behavior?
- 12 A. Could be.
- 13 Q. Could be or is?
- 14 A. It could be, depending on the context.
- 15 Q. What context did you see that as?
- 16 A. An isolated incident doesn't necessarily mean that
- 17 there's a pattern of alienation.
- 18 Q. Did you see that as an isolated incident?
- 19 A. One of several incidents.
- 20 Q. Does "several" mean not isolated to you?
- 21 A. Yes.
- Q. He said, "and he tried to make me live with her."
- 23 What impact did you -- what did you
- 24 understand this boy saying and what impact did it have on
- 25 your custody evaluation?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC - December 4, 2019 Page 74 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 2 It was concerning. Α. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And why is that? 3 0. 4 Because, again, it's putting the child in the Α. middle of the parents' conflict. 5 6 And are you describing the mother at times putting the child in the middle of the parent conflict? 8 Α. Yes. 9 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 10 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me show you -- Page 14 states there, "he wishes the mother would change the way 11 12 'she's not letting my dad see my hockey'." 13 Α. Yes. See that? Did you determine whether or not the 14 Q. 15 mother was permitting the father to see the hockey that he was involved in? 16 17 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Or not permitting him to see 18 Q. 19 the hockey? 20 Initially I think the mother and stepfather 21 didn't -- may not have provided information about the 22 schedule, but then once they did provide the schedule the

Q. What weight --24 25

-- is my understanding. Α.

father was attending events --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

23

Page 75

- 1 Q. What weight did you give the fact that they didn't
- 2 initially provide the hockey information so the father
- 3 could attend?
- 4 A. It made sense to me according to mother's
- 5 perspective of being fearful of the father. But, again,
- 6 it's not good for the father not being allowed to
- 7 participate in the child's events.
- 8 Q. And your understanding of the mother being fearful
- 9 against the father is primarily from the fath- -- that he
- 10 caused her to get run over by a car?
- 11 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 13 A. That's one of the incidents. The retaliation and
- 14 incidents with CPS, the allegations, that's -- that's more
- 15 of the more recent fears the mother has, I believe.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So your understanding of the
- 17 mother's fear stems from the running-over incident and/or
- 18 the CPS allegations recently? Anything --
- MS. HAYES: Objection --
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- else?
- 21 I'm sorry, is that part of the -- what you
- 22 believe the mother's fears are derived from?
- 23 A. Yes.
- 24 Q. Any other incidences besides what you've
- 25 described?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 76

- 1 A. Just the way she believes he's manipulating the
- 2 child, her fears of what that will do for the child
- 3 long-term.
- 4 Q. Is that kind of encapsulated when she describes
- 5 him as a, quote, con man, unquote?
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. In that page, the son described -- it said that he
- 8 would not change anything about his father. Do you recall
- 9 the son saying that?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. How did that strike you?
- 12 A. Children frequently say that --
- 13 **Q.** In your --
- 14 A. -- about one parent or the other.
- 15 Q. Did it describe to you as this fath- -- this son
- 16 loving his father?
- 17 A. Sure.
- 18 Q. Let me see here. Let me, on Page 14 -- you want
- 19 to look there, if it's easier for you? There was a
- 20 description that -- by the boy that Uncle Buck bit him on
- 21 his right arm and left a mark.
- 22 Do you recall that?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. Did you receive photos of the son's bite marks?
- 25 A. I received a photo of the bite mark.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 77

- 1 Q. Okay. Did you believe that -- did the mother say
- 2 that someone else did that?
- 3 A. That's what was reported to me.
- 4 Q. By whom?
- 5 A. The child.
- 6 Q. Okay. So the child said that the mother said
- 7 someone else did that?
- 8 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And did the boy say that the
- 11 mother was lying about that?
- 12 A. He said the father told him the mother was lying,
- 13 yes.
- 14 Q. Okay. Did you believe the mother was lying about
- 15 **that?**
- 16 A. I don't know.
- 17 Q. You agree with me that there were photographs that
- 18 showed marks on the back of this boy?
- 19 A. I don't know that that's the boy, but if I -- I
- 20 can't even tell in that picture, actually, what that is, so
- 21 I don't know.
- 22 Q. You agree with me that there was an allegation in
- 23 a CPS investigation about the mother biting the boy?
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 MS. HAYES: Objection --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 78

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And there were photographs
- 2 provided to CPS or provided to you as well of the bite
- 3 marks?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. Do you believe the mother was doing that, that she
- 6 bit the boy?
- 7 A. I don't know who bit him.
- 8 Q. The boy said his mother bit him, didn't he --
- 9 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- to you?
- 11 A. Well, at one part he said that Uncle Buck did it,
- 12 and then that Buck may have been playing.
- 13 Q. Okay. And another -- was there another time where
- 14 the boy accused the mother -- not Uncle Buck but the mother
- of having bit him, and that resulted, in part, of a CPS
- 16 investigation?
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. Let me show you what's marked as Petitioner's
- 19 Exhibit 120.1 through 1- -- well, 120.2, 120.3, and 8.4.
- 20 Don't know why.
- 21 MR. ESSENBURG: I've got my own numbering
- 22 system.
- MR. NESBITT: I understand.
- 24 MR. ESSENBURG: You've got copies of all of
- 25 this, Kris.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 79

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) That's part of your
- 2 photographs, part of your custody evaluation?
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. Did you have concerns this boy was getting bit by
- 5 the mother or family members?
- 6 A. Sure.
- 7 Q. And did you investigate and determine -- make any
- 8 opinion as to, in fact, if this was going on?
- 9 A. Well, I -- it wasn't going on during my study, so
- 10 I've reviewed the records of the time period when it was
- 11 going on, including CPS reports.
- 12 Q. And when was this going on?
- 13 A. June of 2017.
- 14 Q. Okay. Is it fair to say, if you observe physical
- abuse, under the law, you're supposed to -- of a child,
- that you're supposed to report the physical abuse? You
- 17 have -- you're compelled to do that under the law, as you
- 18 understand it?
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. Did you believe the mother was -- bit this boy?
- 21 A. I don't know. I couldn't make a -- it was --
- 22 Q. But you knew there was something happening on his
- 23 back, did you not?
- 24 A. There was a mark.
- 25 Q. Okay. Did you believe -- did the -- did you ask

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 80

- 1 the mother whether she had done this -- whether she had bit
- 2 this boy?
- 3 A. I don't recall if I asked that specifically.
- 4 Q. You don't recall asking her whether or not she
- 5 physically abused the boy?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. We discussed that there was a CPS case regarding
- 8 it, but I don't know that I asked her straight out. She
- 9 said that the case was ruled out because it didn't happen,
- 10 but I didn't ask her specifically about whether she ever
- 11 bit the child.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you believe this never
- 13 happened?
- 14 A. I --
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 16 A. I don't know. It was ruled out by CPS.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you talk with the CPS
- 18 investigator that talked to the boy and made -- and made
- 19 findings in her CPS report?
- 20 A. No. I received CPS records.
- 21 Q. So you never picked up the phone and called her
- 22 about the biting?
- 23 A. No.
- 24 O. You're aware she interviewed this child?
- 25 A. I don't know who "she" is, but I'm assuming

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 81

- 1 someone interviewed the child.
- 2 Q. Chastity Bazile -- I believe you've got it. Let
- 3 me tell you who it is. Chastity Williams-Bazile, the CPS
- 4 worker.
- 5 A. She was the worker for the second case and they
- 6 were merged together, so I wasn't sure if she was the
- 7 interviewer for the first case.
- 8 Q. Did you ever ask her?
- 9 A. I never spoke with her by phone.
- 10 Q. Let me show you what's been marked as Petitioner's
- 11 Exhibit 126, the Child Protective Services report and the
- 12 conclusions in the CPS report. Read, if you would,
- 13 Petitioner's Exhibit 126 and tell me whether or not, in
- 14 your summary from CPS, that same statement that you're
- 15 reading there was included in your summarized CPS reports.
- 16 A. This is a summary of the allegation, and I don't
- 17 think that this was included in my -- the copy of my
- 18 report, but I -- I don't recall.
- 19 Q. Are you aware that, in fact, that's not a summary
- 20 of the allegations; that's her findings, conclusions?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 23 A. No, it's not.
- 24 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. But at the end of the
- 25 day, your CPS summary did not contain what's been marked in

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 82 1 Petitioner's Exhibit 126, the CPS report under the heading 2 "Conclusions"; is that correct? I don't --3 Α. MS. HAYES: Objection to form. I don't recall. Α. 6 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. So it may or may not have, you're not able to recall? 7 8 Α. Correct. 9 And just for the record, Conclusions: "MO and AU Q. 10 have demonstrated bizarre physical punishment by biting and causing injuries to a vulnerable aged six-year-old in 11 12 vital, non-vital bodily areas; MO's ongoing issues with substance abuse impair MO's ability to provide adequate 13 care and supervision of six-year-old." 14 15 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 16 Can we get a date on that? 17 MR. ESSENBURG: It's the record, so I don't 18 know. 19 MS. HAYES: Well, surely --20 MR. ESSENBURG: You've got --21 MS. HAYES: -- the record --22 MR. ESSENBURG: You've got a copy of that. 23 MS. HAYES: For the record, I would like a date on the record. 24 25 MR. ESSENBURG: I'll let you look at it.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 83 1 MR. NESBITT: Can I see the exhibit, 2 please --MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah. You can look at it. 3 4 MR. NESBITT: -- if you're going to ask my client about it. 5 6 MR. ESSENBURG: (Tenders exhibit to Mr. Nesbitt.) 8 Α. That is not a summary. 9 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Did you ever call --Q. 10 determine whether this CPS investigator believed exactly what was written on there? 11 12 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 13 I know what she believed because the disposition says "ruled out," it didn't happen. 14 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So you believe there was no 15 biting -- or, I'm sorry, you believe that some CPS 16 17 investigator said there was no biting; is that correct? MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 18 19 Α. What the worker said was it doesn't meet the 20 statute for physical abuse; therefore, the evidence shows 21 that the disposition is ruled out. 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Do you know what 23 forms -- what's the standard in order for CPS to find that 24 there was physical abuse or, for example, reason to 25 believe?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 84

- 1 A. I don't have the exact wording of the statute, but
- 2 basically it is that there were -- there was the potential
- 3 for or injury to a child in a -- especially in a vital body
- 4 area or a child under a certain age and that injury did
- 5 occur or potentially could have occurred.
- 6 Q. Okay. Is it -- are you aware that it's, in fact,
- 7 quote, serious bodily injury, unquote?
- 8 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 9 A. What is?
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) That the standard for them to
- 11 have reason to believe for physical abuse requires serious
- 12 bodily injury.
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 14 A. I don't recall.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. So you didn't know, one
- 16 way or the other?
- 17 A. I knew what the disposition was for the case.
- 18 Q. Okay. Are you aware that, in fact, the
- 19 disposition was not that it didn't have the biting, but
- that the biting was not, quote, serious bodily injury,
- 21 unquote?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Are you aware of that?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 25 A. I don't remember how it was worded exactly.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 85

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. So from CPS's
- 2 perspective, unless the injury rises to that level, such as
- 3 the bite mark, in their opinion, did not rise to the level
- 4 of a, quote, serious bodily injury, then they ruled it out.
- 5 Are you aware of that?
- 6 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 7 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Not that it didn't happen.
- 10 Are you aware that they're not finding that it didn't
- 11 happen?
- 12 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What did this boy tell you --
- 15 and let me bring your attention here to Page 14. On
- 16 Page 14 you wrote in your custody evaluation,
- 17 "Lauriston" -- that's the boy -- "states the father told
- 18 him about the abuse that happened to him when he was five
- 19 years old 'but I remember'; he states he and the father"
- (sic) "Facetimed the" -- "the mother Facetimed the father,
- and the mother 'started biting me and I slapped her in the
- 22 face to defend myself; my dad said, 'Nikki, stop' and she
- 23 hanged up'; he was unable to give further specifics about
- 24 this incident."
- Did you get that information from the boy,

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 86 1 the son? 2 Α. Yes. So from the son's perspective, the mother bit him; 3 Q. is that -- was that your understanding? 5 That's what the father told him that happened. Α. 6 Q. Okay. Α. Yes. 8 Q. But he said in there, "but I remember;" did he 9 not? 10 Α. Yes. So did you understand the boy saying that it was 11 Q. 12 also coming from him? 13 Α. That's what --14 MS. HAYES: Objection ---- he said. 15 Α. MS. HAYES: -- to form. 16 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you believe this boy? MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 18 19 Α. No, not necessarily. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Are you aware that the 20 21 mother, at a temporary orders hearing, admitted that she 22 did that? 23 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. A. Did what? 24 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Bit the boy.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 87 1 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 2 I was told that, yes. Α. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) By whom? 3 Q. 4 Α. By the father. 5 Did you ask the mother whether she did that? 0. 6 Α. I don't recall specifically. 7 Let me bring your attention to Page 14. Q. 8 particular statement says, "Lauriston reports the father 9 brings his gun with him when they leave the house 'to take 10 up for anyone'; he states the gun is 'in his pocket all the time' and it is black." 11 12 You wrote that in your evaluation? 13 Α. Yes. And you would agree with me it's not illegal to 14 carry guns in Texas? 15 16 Α. Correct. 17 He has a license to carry? Did you determine 18 that? 19 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. 20 He told me he had a license to carry, yes. Α. 21 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So he wasn't doing anything 22 illegal to carry a gun? 23 MS. HAYES: Objection to form. Not that I know of. 24 Α. 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Does he have -- did you find

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 88

- 1 any criminal record of the father in your -- in the custody
- 2 evaluation?
- 3 A. No.
- 4 Q. Did you find any assault charges or arrest ever of
- 5 the father?
- 6 A. No.
- 7 Q. Were there any allegations -- criminal allegations
- 8 of threats, like a terroristic threat or something like
- 9 that?
- 10 A. Not that I know of.
- 11 Q. Did you in your custody evaluation make any
- 12 findings or receive any emails, texts, or other written
- 13 communications by the father threatening to hurt the mother
- 14 or her husband?
- 15 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 16 A. No.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Are you aware of any verbal
- 18 threats by the father to hurt anybody ever?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 20 A. The mother stated that the father told her at the
- 21 time of their separation that he would, something like,
- 22 make your life miserable.
- 23 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) I'm talking about threats of
- 24 physical violence.
- 25 A. Not that I recall, no.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 89

- 1 Q. Did you, in the course of your evaluation, receive
- 2 any mental health evaluations that he's some sort of
- 3 physical danger to anyone?
- 4 A. Not that I know of, no.
- Q. Or a threat to anyone?
- 6 A. No.
- 7 Q. Do you have some perception that this father could
- 8 be a physical threat to anyone?
- 9 A. Possibly, yes.
- 10 Q. Tell the Court all the reasons you believe this
- 11 father, in your mind, would be a physical threat to anyone.
- 12 A. I think he has convinced himself that the mother
- is a danger to the child, that she poses risks, that he has
- 14 to win in this situation. And I don't know to what he's
- 15 capable if he doesn't win. His whole world revolves around
- this child, and it's a big part of his own persona; and,
- 17 therefore, it concerns me if he were to legally lose any
- 18 part of his persona.
- 19 Q. Would you agree with me that you don't have
- anything other than your thoughts and concerns about him
- 21 posing a threat because there's no criminal records,
- there's no assault records, there's no mental health
- 23 records, there's no witnesses to family violence, is there?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 A. Yes, that's true.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 90

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You said one of the -- the
- 2 basis, as I understand it, that he could pose a danger to
- 3 the child because of his -- I'm sorry, mis- -- I don't mean
- 4 to mischaracterize it. If I do, restate it, if you would.
- 5 But poses a danger to the child if he loses the custody
- 6 case because his life revolves around the child because
- 7 that's his persona?
- 8 Is that a bad way of characterizing what you
- 9 just said?
- 10 A. That's accurate.
- 11 Q. The mother believes that the father poses a danger
- 12 to this child, doesn't she, with the running-over incident?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. And isn't it in her persona that she be the
- 15 **mother --**
- MS. HAYES: Objection --
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- and have primary custody of
- 18 the child?
- 19 A. That's her wish, yes.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Isn't the perception of the
- 21 mother and father similar in that they both feel the other
- 22 is a danger to the child?
- 23 A. It's not expressed the same way, but they both
- 24 have that fear of the other person.
- Q. Okay. Why is his impactful in your perception but

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 91

- 1 her's not impactful in your perception?
- 2 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 3 Α. The mother's reaction is to retreat, to withdraw,
- 4 to be fearful, to shut down emotionally; and the father's
- way of handling it appears to be to use other resources to 5
- 6 get back at, to make allegations that would impact the
- mother or people around her to, you know, denigrate the
- mother in the community, to try to receive people on his 8
- 9 side such as professionals, counselors, those types of
- 10 people to convince them that he is correct in his view of
- the situation. The mother doesn't do all of that work. 11
- She does the opposite, tends to retreat. 12
- 13 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Tell the Court all the
- resources you believe the father has used to -- well, I'm 14
- sorry, you didn't describe anything that was -- constitute 15
- a physical threat to the mother, did you? 16
- 17 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Just using resources; is that
- 19 correct?
- 20 Α. Yes.
- 21 So how do you get from using physical resources to
- 22 physical threat?
- 23 MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 24 Α. Well, if the object of involving CPS and the
- police and talking negatively to the child about the 25

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6721 817-447-6491 FAX

Page 92

- 1 mother, the intent is to -- is to cause the mother harm, if
- 2 the father's campaign were to be thwarted by the legal
- 3 system, I just don't know what he's capable of, and that
- 4 may include physical threats or physical violence.
- 5 O. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Where -- tell the Court all
- 6 the facts you believe that it would -- could entail, quote,
- 7 physical violence.
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. I don't understand what you're asking.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You said that it could entail
- 11 physical violence if he doesn't get his way, did you not?
- 12 A. Yes.
- 13 Q. Tell the Court all the facts that forms the basis
- of your belief that could -- he could -- if he doesn't get
- 15 his way, it could entail physical violence.
- 16 A. Because the father is used to getting his way he
- 17 believes he's going to get his way, and he's willing to be
- 18 vindictive enough to use any resource possible, I believe,
- 19 to make that happen.
- 20 Q. So you believe if somebody's used to getting their
- 21 way, and not getting their way -- and uses resources and --
- 22 then that translates to violence?
- 23 A. It could because he's -- he's okay with even using
- 24 the child to get what he wants, which tells me that the
- 25 boundary issues are problematic.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 93

- Q. Is it fair to say that you really don't know?
- MS. HAYES: Objection to form.
- 3 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 4 A. No. I don't know for sure, no. No one can
- 5 predict future violence.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Has -- if the mother -- you're
- 7 saying their personalities are different: the mother
- 8 withdraws and the father goes and does a bunch of action
- 9 things to help himself, and if he doesn't get his way then
- 10 he could potentially be physically violent? Is that your
- 11 perspective?
- 12 A. Yes.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 14 Counsel, when we get to a break, I need to
- 15 use the restroom.
- 16 MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah. Sure. We can do it
- 17 any time you want.
- 18 MS. HAYES: Prior to going off the record,
- 19 I'd like to stipulate on the record that the date of the
- 20 records that you were discussing previously where I'd asked
- 21 that a date be published is 6-15 of 2017.
- Is that your understanding as well,
- 23 Mr. Nesbitt, Mr. Essenburg?
- 24 MR. NESBITT: I think it's the June and July
- 25 time frame --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

```
Page 94
 1
                   MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah.
 2
                   MR. NESBITT: -- of 2017.
 3
                   THE WITNESS: Yeah, it's -- there's several
     records in there --
 4
 5
                   MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah.
 6
                   THE WITNESS: -- but that's the time frame.
                   MS. HAYES: Great. Thank you.
 8
                   MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. Let's go off the
 9
     record.
10
                   (Lunch taken from 12:21 p.m. to 1:13 p.m.)
                   (Ms. Hayes leaves deposition and Mr. Whiddon
11
12
                   joins deposition.)
13
                   (Mr. Cottingham leaves deposition.)
              (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Jennifer, we're back on the
14
         Q.
              You understand you're back under oath?
15
     record.
16
         Α.
              Yes.
17
              And let me show you -- let's see here -- Page 15
         Q.
     of your interrogatory. I've -- in particular -- I've kind
18
     of highlighted for you the particular portion of the page
19
20
     that I'm -- why don't you take a look at that portion that
21
     I've highlighted there.
2.2
         Α.
              Yes.
23
              Was it your understanding, Jennifer, that this boy
     likes his father's house?
24
25
         Α.
              Yes.
```

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 95

- 1 Q. He liked going to the school he'd always gone to?
- 2 A. Correct.
- 3 Q. And what weight did you give to that?
- 4 A. It was a concern.
- Q. It was -- was it important?
- 6 A. It's important to keep stability, yes.
- 7 Q. And did the boy's school represent stability, in
- 8 your mind?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. Would this boy not continuing at that school that
- 11 he was going near his father's house create, in your mind,
- 12 some instability for him?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 14 A. It may.
- 15 O. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let's see here. Take a look
- 16 at Page 15 there. I've highlighted a portion there that
- 17 states -- this is the boy talking. "He states now the
- 18 mother and her family are mean to the father. Lauriston
- 19 states the father gave him this information. As an example
- of 'meanness' he states the father came to pick him up from
- 21 the mother's parents and it was raining. He states the
- 22 mother 'made my dad stand in the rain'."
- 23 Did you -- did you get that from the boy?
- 24 A. Yes.
- Q. And did you believe him?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 96

- 1 A. I believe that he was told that.
- Q. Okay. Do you believe that happened, that the
- 3 father was made to stand in the rain?
- 4 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 5 A. I don't know.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So it may or may not have
- 7 happened; you don't know, one way or the other?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. The -- yes. The important part to me was that the
- 10 father gave him this information that was negative about
- 11 the mother.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) If the truth of the matter was
- 13 that the mother made him stand in the rain while waiting
- 14 for his son, would that have been important?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 16 A. No, not likely.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) In your mind, that would not
- 18 be any form of alienation or meanness?
- 19 A. It may be, but I thought that was a minor thing.
- 20 Q. Let me have you take a look at Page 15. I'll
- 21 highlight the portion that I'm looking at there. It
- 22 says -- Page 15, it says, "Lauriston states" -- that's the
- 23 boy -- "the mother is angry and when he texts the father,
- 24 the mother says 'you're grounded' and takes away his
- 25 phone."

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

		Page 97
1		Do you see that?
2	Α.	Yes.
3	Q.	Did you write that in your report?
4	Α.	Yes.
5	Q.	Did you get that from the boy?
6	А.	Yes.
7	Q.	Did you believe this boy?
8		MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
9	A.	I believe that he thought that, yes.
10	Q.	(BY MR. ESSENBURG) If the mother was angry at the
11	11 father and took away the phone, would that be, in your	
12	mind, a	form of alienation?
13		MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
14	Α.	It's certainly not good coparenting.
15	Q.	(BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is it alienation?
16	A.	It could be.
17	Q.	Do you have any doubt?
18		MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
19		MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
20	Α.	Doubt about I don't
21	Q.	(BY MR. ESSENBURG) Whether or not that's
22 alienation if she takes away the phone, can't talk with his		
23	father?	
24	Α.	Well, that alone one incident is not
25	alienati	on.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 98

- 1 Q. Do you have any information or knowledge that it
- was just one incident?
- 3 A. No.
- 4 Q. Let me show you Page 16 and where you wrote in the
- 5 report, "When asked if Lauriston believes that his mother
- 6 also tries to 'help him understand things about his
- 7 parents' he states, 'I think my mom has a little bit of
- 8 problems with being mean to my dad; he thinks that too'."
- 9 Did you write that?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. Did you believe that the boy said that?
- 12 A. He said it to me, so yes.
- 13 Q. Okay. Is this boy able to read?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. And how old was he when he told you that,
- 16 approximately?
- 17 A. He would have been seven still, I believe.
- 18 Q. Okay. Did you believe or have some understanding
- 19 that the father showed him some sort of legal documents?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. Do you believe he's able to read and understand
- 22 legal documents at seven?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 24 A. Not in -- not likely understand them, no.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me turn your attention to

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 99

- 1 Page 16, this particular sentence there.
- Do you see that (indicating)?
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. "When asked if the father ever says anything nice
- 5 about the mother, Lauriston states, 'No, because my mom
- 6 hasn't done anything nice'."
- 7 Did you get that from the boy?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. Did you ask him if the mother ever says anything
- 10 nice about his dad?
- 11 A. Yes. I always ask the question both ways.
- 12 Q. And what did he say?
- 13 A. He -- I believe he said, "I don't know."
- 14 Q. Was he able to articulate anything nice that the
- 15 mother says about the father?
- 16 A. No.
- 17 Q. What impact did that have, the fact that he wasn't
- 18 able to articulate anything nice about the father?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 20 A. That's not unusual for a seven-year-old.
- 21 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) The fact that his father had
- 22 not said anything nice about the mother, did that impact
- 23 your evaluation?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- A. No, not necessarily. Again, a seven-year-old

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 100

- 1 isn't always able to answer those questions.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Was it your
- 3 understanding that Rob Cottingham is on his third marriage?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. Okay. Let me show you Page 16. Let me see if I
- 6 can pull that up so it's easier for you to find. On
- 7 Page 17 it says, "In the first case June" -- "from June
- 8 2017, the allegation was made" -- "was that the mother's
- 9 brother" -- I can't pronounce that.
- 10 A. Nguyen.
- 11 Q. -- "Nguyen, called Buck by the fam-" -- called
- 12 Buck by the family, had held Lauriston and in scissor hold
- and upside down, which the boy" -- (sic) -- "did not like."
- 14 Did you get that information from the boy
- 15 **directly?**
- 16 A. No.
- 17 Q. Who did you get that from?
- 18 A. From the CP- -- excuse me, from the CPS records.
- 19 Q. Okay. Did you believe the CPS records?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. Did you believe that happened?
- 22 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 23 A. I believe that it was the allegation.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ever determine or did
- you ever form an opinion as to whether that happened?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 101

- 1 A. No.
- 2 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 3 A. I wasn't able to.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You didn't form an opinion,
- 5 one way or the other?
- 6 A. No.
- Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 17.
- 8 "The second case, from July 2017, alleged the mother's
- 9 brother Eddie took a bath with the child and hugged him
- 10 tightly, making him feel uncomfortable."
- 11 Did you ever -- did you get information
- 12 regarding that issue; and, if so, from whom and when?
- 13 A. Both parents discussed it in the joint interview
- 14 that CPS had been involved, and they gave their versions of
- 15 the story. And then in the individual interview, I always
- 16 ask a question about when CPS has been involved, what --
- 17 the specifics. And then I got the Child Protective
- 18 Services' records from CPS directly.
- 19 Q. Did you get the summary or did you get the full
- 20 report?
- 21 A. We get -- it's not the entire report. It's the --
- 22 the allegation, the reporter, the case notes, drug testing
- 23 results, phone calls, summaries, any services the parents
- 24 completed, contact notes, and disposition.
- 25 Q. Okay. Did you ever get any -- what was your

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 102

- 1 understanding that happened? Did you understand that the
- 2 brother, Uncle Eddie, got naked into a bathtub with the
- 3 **boy?**
- 4 A. The allegation said just what I wrote here, but
- 5 then when --
- 6 Q. Took a bath with the child? You said --
- 7 A. That's --
- 8 Q. -- the allegation is Eddie took a bath with the
- 9 child.
- 10 A. That's what --
- 11 Q. Is that --
- 12 A. Yes, that's what the allegation said. But then
- 13 when -- I listed out here what various people said
- 14 regarding that.
- 15 Q. Was it your understanding, then, when you wrote
- 16 that that he got in the bathtub naked with the boy?
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 18 A. That that was the allegation, yes.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. And did you understand
- 20 that he was a priest in training?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. What was -- what opinion, if any, did you have as
- 23 to whether or not a priest should be getting naked in a
- 24 bathtub with a eight- -- seven-year-old boy?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 103

- 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- A. He would have been five at the time, and I don't
- 3 necessarily think that any adult should be doing that. It
- 4 didn't -- him being a priest or not a priest didn't have
- 5 much to do with my concern.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Are you aware that there are
- 7 rules from priests and priests in training as to how they
- 8 should conduct themselves around young children?
- 9 A. Oh, I'm sure there are.
- 10 Q. Let me show you what's marked as Petitioner's
- 11 Exhibit Number 144, a letter from the Jesuits about the
- 12 standards of conduct for priests, in particular the second
- 13 page has the standards of conduct.
- 14 A. Okay.
- 15 Q. Do you see the second page? Read that highlighted
- 16 or circled portion.
- 17 A. "Prohibited Behaviors: Being nude in the presence
- 18 of minors; changing and showering facilities for Jesuits
- 19 are to be separate from such facilities for minors."
- Q. Okay. Did the mother or any of her family ever
- 21 explain what their brother was doing in the bathtub with
- 22 this boy?
- 23 A. Yes.
- 24 Q. What did they say?
- 25 A. The -- Eddie, in his interview with CPS, stated

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 104

- 1 that the mother wants -- he was visiting from out of town,
- 2 the family was getting ready to go somewhere, the mother
- 3 asked him to make sure that the child's hair was rinsed of
- 4 shampoo, and that he went into the bathroom, touched the
- 5 child's head to make sure there was no shampoo, and that he
- 6 left the bathroom and that at no time was he naked.
- 7 Q. Did you ever review the forensic interview of the
- 8 child by the police regarding what the police forensic
- 9 interview stated?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 11 A. No.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You never asked for it; is
- 13 that correct?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 15 A. I asked for Dallas Police Department records, but
- 16 I did not receive the forensic interview.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And even though you didn't
- 18 receive the forensic interview, you went ahead and
- 19 published your evaluation; is that correct?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. Did you pick up the phone and ask the CPS worker
- 22 as to what her opinion was of what happened regarding Uncle
- 23 Eddie, the priest in training, getting in naked in the
- 24 bathtub with a boy?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 105

- 1 A. No.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Why not?
- 3 A. Because I had the records, which was -- they were
- 4 written by her.
- 5 Q. Do you know what the standard is for what they
- 6 require in order to proceed forward with criminal
- 7 prosecution?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. Not specifically, no.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Are you aware that, in
- 11 fact, in order for them to proceed forward, they had to
- 12 have in the interview that there was sexual gratification
- by the Jesuit priest in order to go forward with a criminal
- 14 case?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 16 A. I -- I don't know what the standard is.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So that you could be naked in
- 18 a bathtub with a boy inappropriately, and if they can't
- 19 prove beyond a reasonable doubt sexual gratification that
- 20 they will rule it out?
- 21 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Are you aware of that?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 24 A. I'm aware that sexual gratification is a component
- 25 of the CPS standards for whether it is ruled out or not.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 106

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would you agree with me it
- 2 might be difficult for a five- or six-year-old boy to
- 3 express sexual gratification to a police officer
- 4 interviewing him?
- 5 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So when they're ruling it out,
- 8 they're not finding that it didn't happen, they just have
- 9 to have the evidence of sexual gratification? Without it,
- 10 even if he was molested or not, they're not going to go
- 11 forward without the evidence, you understand that --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- of sexual gratification?
- 14 MR. NESBITT: Sorry. Objection, form.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You understand that?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. So is it your understanding that ruling it out
- doesn't mean it didn't happen?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) It's just a standard as to
- 22 whether or not they can prove their criminal case?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- A. As to whether they can prove their CPS case.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Yes. I'm sorry.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 107

- 1 To me, my understanding is the criminal case is a
- 2 separate --
- 3 Q. Yes.
- Α. -- process.
- Yes, prove their criminal case. Q.
- 6 What is your understanding of what the father
- 7 alleged to have happened between the son and Uncle Eddie?
- 8 What facts did he allege?
- 9 It depends which time he was spoken --Α.
- 10 Q. Okay.
- 11 Α. -- to.
- 12 Give me all of them. 0.
- 13 Okay. So initially the allegation, his father
- said the child made an outcry that Eddie took a bath with 14
- the child and hugged him tightly, making him feel 15
- uncomfortable. 16
- 17 Then it was alleged that the father -- more
- details that the father was -- that the uncle was nude, 18
- 19 that he touched the child with a soapy hand on his
- 20 genitals.
- 21 Then there were several more phone calls
- 22 after the case was completed, I believe, in which there
- 23 were additional details.
- What details? 24 0.
- 25 That -- hang on. That he had -- that the child Α.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 108

- 1 told the father lots of times that Eddie had gotten into
- 2 the tub with him and washed his penis, that -- and then
- 3 there were phone calls after the fact to the police
- 4 investigator in which the father reportedly had the child
- 5 get on the phone and add more details personally to --
- 6 through the phone call to the police officer investigator.
- 7 Q. What details?
- 8 A. I don't know. Those weren't listed specifically.
- 9 Q. Okay. Anything else?
- 10 A. That's all I know of that -- regarding what
- 11 occurred in that incident supposedly.
- 12 Q. So let me make sure I understand your testimony
- 13 here to the Court today.
- 14 Your understanding of the allegations the
- 15 father made was that Eddie, the uncle, got in nude into the
- 16 bathtub with this five-year-old boy; is that correct?
- 17 A. It was just that he had gotten in the tub, was --
- 18 **Q. Yeah.**
- 19 A. -- the first allegation.
- 20 Q. And then, secondly, he touched the boy and washed
- 21 his genitals with a soapy hand?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. And then there were other details, but they're
- 24 unknown?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 109

- 1 Q. Okay. At any time, did you understand the father
- 2 alleged that the Uncle Eddie had sexual gratification with
- 3 the boy?
- 4 A. No.
- 5 Q. So the father just alleged that the -- the Uncle
- 6 Eddie, then, just got nude in the bathtub, kind of
- 7 inappropriate, but didn't allege sexual gratification.
- 8 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is that fair or unfair to say?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 11 A. He wasn't specific about that topic.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Can you understand that
- a father might get a little alarmed if a Jesuit priest
- 14 that's not supposed to be getting naked in a bathtub is
- 15 getting naked in a bathtub with his five-year-old boy?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you think that's
- 19 unreasonable?
- 20 A. His alarm or the incident?
- 21 **Q.** Both.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 23 A. If he believed that happened, sure, he should be
- 24 alarmed by that.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) In your mind, is it

Page 110

- 1 appropriate to make a referral to CPS if there was
- 2 inappropriate sexual contact?
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. Let me turn your attention here to Page 17, and
- 5 there -- by Dr. Chandler. Dr. Chand- -- it says on
- 6 Page 17, "Dr. Guy Chandler, a counselor paid for by Sacred
- 7 Heart Center and he was interviewed; Dr." -- "interviewed;
- 8 Dr. Chandler stated the father 'does not have a good filter
- 9 and he can be hyperfocused on certain things'; he reported
- 10 that he had been working with the father on this behavior."
- 11 Do you see that?
- 12 A. Yes.
- 13 Q. That was the Jesuit priest counselor that they
- 14 paid for; is it not?
- 15 A. Yes, that's what I was told.
- 16 Q. Did you ever pick up the phone and call him about
- 17 that incident?
- 18 A. No.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you believe you have any
- 21 obligation to verify that type of collateral information?
- 22 A. Yes.
- 23 Q. So why didn't you pick up the phone and call and
- 24 do further investigation on that?
- 25 A. Because I can't --

Page 111

- 1 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 2 A. I can't always track down every single lead for
- 3 time sake.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But doesn't inappropriate
- 5 sexual contact or nude -- bathing nude, isn't that a pretty
- 6 big ticket item or somebody being run over by a car?
- 7 Aren't those pretty big ticket items that maybe should be
- 8 investigated?
- 9 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 10 A. They were. I received records regarding those
- 11 investigations.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me turn your attention to
- 13 Page 17. You wrote in there -- and I'm not sure I put a
- 14 context under here, but it says --
- 15 A. That's 18. Yeah.
- 16 Q. I highlighted it and I crossed out the -- the boy
- 17 got -- referred to a large African-American woman because
- 18 he stated the child had issues with a large
- 19 African-American woman at school?
- 20 A. That was the worker that came to the house.
- 21 **Q.** Uh-huh.
- 22 A. The father called her directly and asked her not
- 23 to interview the child at the mother's house for the CPS
- 24 case because she would be asleep because she takes too much
- 25 Xanax, and so he should be interviewed at the father's

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 112

- 1 house. So she said that was fine.
- 2 So she showed up to the father's house, as
- 3 agreed upon, and the father wouldn't answer the door. Then
- 4 he called the worker back later to ask if she was a large
- 5 African-American woman because he was explaining that
- 6 that's why he didn't answer the door.
- 7 Q. Do you believe he was racist in some way in that
- 8 episode?
- 9 A. I'm not sure. That's kind of rude. I'm not sure
- 10 it rises to the level of racist.
- 11 Q. Do you think it's rude if people don't answer the
- 12 door of their own home?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 14 A. If they had an appointment and he was expecting
- 15 her, yes.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you know whether there was
- 17 an appointment and he was expecting her?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 19 A. They had agreed to do the interview at the
- 20 father's residence that next day, so I'm assuming that
- 21 they -- he knew of it.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you know whether or not
- 23 they had a set appointment time?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 25 A. No, I don't.

Page 113

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So you assumed that she went
- 2 there at the agreed-upon time and knocked on the door, and
- 3 he just didn't answer?
- 4 A. Or that -- I mean, he should have been expecting a
- 5 worker. They all have to have a badge and they all show
- 6 their badge, so I'm assuming there's another reason why he
- 7 didn't want to answer the door. I'm not sure what that
- 8 was, though.
- 9 Q. But you don't know whether there was a set
- 10 appointment, do you?
- 11 A. No.
- 12 Q. Do you believe he was racist in some way?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 14 A. No, not necessarily.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me show you Page 18 here
- in this particular -- it says, "The mother was engaged to
- 17 Rob Cottingham and he lives in Oak Lawn, which the father
- 18 called 'gay town'."
- 19 Who did you get that information from?
- 20 A. From the CPS worker.
- 21 Q. Okay. Did he believe that the father was
- 22 homophobic or didn't like gay people?
- 23 A. I -- I don't know. I'm not sure why else you
- 24 would point that out to the CPS worker.
- 25 Q. So did you write it up because you believe -- and

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 114

- 1 you put "gay town" in quotes. Did you write it up because
- 2 you believed he was against gays?
- 3 A. No. I --
- 4 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 5 A. I wrote it up because it was what -- the
- 6 information about all the father's phone calls. My --
- 7 my -- my reasoning was that I needed to show how many times
- 8 the father contacted the CPS worker after the interview and
- 9 about what topics. That was my intent.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you believe he's against
- 11 gay people?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 14 A. I don't know.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Or prejudiced?
- 16 A. I don't know.
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ask him if he had any
- 19 gay friends?
- 20 A. No.
- 21 Q. Or if he -- did you ask him if he didn't like gay
- 22 **people?**
- 23 A. No.
- 24 Q. In your opinion, does Oak Lawn have a large gay
- 25 **population?**

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 115

- 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you have any family members
- 4 that are gay?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 18, and I'll
- 7 highlight for you the relevant portion on that page. "The
- 8 father reported that the mother was a swinger, and her
- 9 first husband" -- "with her first husband and that the
- 10 hairdresser told him that the mother was the best Ecstasy
- 11 dealer in the area; the father stated that he purchased
- 12 AK47s and AR15s."
- 13 Do you see that?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. Did you form an opinion as to whether or not the
- 16 mother had had a swinging lifestyle in the past?
- 17 A. I asked her about those concerns because they were
- 18 listed in the father's concerns about the mother.
- 19 Q. And what was her response?
- 20 A. She denied that that had been an issue for her.
- 21 Q. Did he ever provide you photos of that?
- 22 A. He provided, I think, a photo of the mother
- 23 sitting on a couch with two men. That was all that I
- 24 recall.
- 25 Q. Do you recall him bringing that notebook when he

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 116

- 1 first came to talk with you having those photos?
- 2 A. Yes.
- Q. Let me show you what's marked as 129.1, 129.2, and
- 4 129.3 and ask you if you recall receiving those photos when
- 5 you first walked in?
- 6 A. I don't recall.
- 7 I remember this one (indicating).
- 8 Q. Do you remember 129.1 and 129.2?
- 9 A. No.
- 10 Q. So did you -- did that cause any concern for you
- 11 about her lifestyle in the past?
- 12 A. No.
- 13 Q. So from your perspective, it didn't matter if she
- 14 had a swinging lifestyle or not?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 16 A. I don't know that it didn't.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) In terms of impacting your
- 18 custody recommendations.
- 19 A. I don't know that it didn't matter, it's that that
- 20 doesn't prove that.
- Q. Okay. If it was true, would it -- would it impact
- 22 your recommendation?
- 23 A. No. The dad is alleging that's something that
- 24 happened over 10 years ago, before the child's birth. So
- 25 those things usually don't impact very much.

Page 117

- 1 Q. Okay. "The father stated he has purchased the
- 2 AK47s and AR15s." Did you believe that the father had
- 3 done something illegal, buying these guns?
- 4 A. No.
- 5 Q. Did you believe he was some sort of mass shooter
- 6 or posed a violent threat owning these guys?
- 7 A. No.
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. No.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you consider him some sort
- 11 of threat to the mother, to son, or others by virtue of the
- 12 fact that he had these guns?
- 13 A. No.
- 14 Q. Were you aware that he worked as a DEA agent in
- 15 the past?
- 16 A. That's what he stated, yes.
- 17 Q. And that, in fact, they were not automatic
- weapons, they were semi-automatic weapons?
- 19 A. I didn't make that distinction, no.
- Q. How do you feel about guns, in general?
- 21 A. I own one. Don't have a problem with it.
- Q. When's the last time you shot one?
- 23 A. It's been a couple of years.
- Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 18. "The
- 25 mother stated the father has agoraphobia."

Page 118 1 Do you see that? 2 Α. Yes. Did you believe that? 3 0. It was documented in one of the reports, but, 4 Α. 5 again, it didn't really impact what's going on with the 6 family now, so I don't know if I believe it or not. If the mother was either lying or not 8 understanding the truth, would that impact your -- impact 9 your custody evaluation? 10 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form. Objection, form. 11 MR. NESBITT: 12 I believe where she got it from was Dr. Siegel's 13 report in which he states that he has been diagnosed with That's where the mother got it from, which is 14 where --15 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) We previously showed you 16 Q. 17 Petitioner's Exhibit 178, which was Dr. Arauzo's --Right. But it wasn't in that; it was in 18 Α. 19 Dr. Siegel's custody evaluation --20 I understand. 0. -- which is on the disk. 21 Α. 22 Q. Yeah. 23 Α. It's not -- I don't have paper of it. 24 Did you have any reason to disbelieve Dr. Arauzo? Q. 25 Α. No.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 119

- 1 Q. Okay. Let me show you Page -- on Page 18,
- 2 Lauriston was interviewed and he stated, "Mommy lies a lot
- and she is mean to her fam-" -- "mean to her family." "He
- 4 stated he does not want to go to mother's house sometimes
- 5 because he is bored."
- 6 You wrote that up on Page 18; is that
- 7 correct?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. Did you believe -- did this statement come from
- 10 the boy?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. Did you believe that the boy was lying about his
- 13 mother?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 15 A. I didn't interview him directly. I was getting
- 16 this from when CPS interviewed him, so I don't have a lot
- 17 of context about, you know, how he -- how he said that. I
- 18 don't have a lot of the other indicators.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you ever find any
- 20 instances where the mother was lying in your custody
- 21 evaluation?
- 22 A. Not that I can specifically think of.
- Q. So if -- when she was telling her side of the
- 24 story about getting run over by the car, you don't believe
- 25 she was lying?

Page 120

- 1 A. No. I believe she was telling her version of what
- 2 she believes happened.
- 3 Q. When she was denying she bit her son, do you
- 4 believe -- you believe -- do you believe her that -- you
- 5 don't believe she was lying?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. I don't know on that one. I don't know.
- 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) When she stated to you that
- 9 the father had never traveled 15 years away from -- from
- 10 his home, did you believe that she was lying --
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- or not?
- 13 A. I don't know a way to prove that or disprove that,
- 14 so I don't know that I considered it.
- 15 Q. So you didn't consider it, one way or the other?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection --
- 17 A. Correct.
- 18 MR. WHIDDON: -- form.
- 19 A. Correct.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did she deny doing drugs?
- 21 A. No.
- 22 Q. She admitted doing drugs?
- 23 A. In the past, yes.
- Q. Okay. Did she tell you that she did Xanax?
- 25 A. She said she was prescribed Xanax, yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 121

- 1 Q. Did she tell you she used cocaine?
- 2 A. She said she used Ecstasy in the past.
- 3 Q. Did she say that she had used cocaine?
- 4 A. Not that I know of.
- 5 O. Let me show you what's marked as Petitioner's
- 6 Exhibit 127 and ask you if that was a part of your CPS
- 7 report, as a general or specific that you received from
- 8 CPS?
- 9 MR. NESBITT: I'm going to interject here.
- 10 By statute, we are prohibited from disclosing CPS records.
- 11 I'm going to caution the witness to be very careful about
- 12 disclosing what's in the records. We have not produced
- 13 those records for the record and will not produce them.
- 14 But I just want to caution the witness, be very careful
- 15 about disclosing what's in records that we are prohibited
- 16 by statute from disclosing.
- 17 THE WITNESS: Uh-huh.
- 18 A. I'm sorry, what was your question?
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you receive that CPS
- 20 report that's identified as Exhibit 127?
- 21 A. I -- we already talked about this one. This
- 22 was -- I received information about this allegation detail,
- 23 yes.
- Q. Okay. Did you specifically receive in your report
- 25 from CPS any information about mother's drug use?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 122 1 Α. That's what the allegation was. 2 0. Okay. Did you receive that in your report? 3 MR. NESBITT: Report or --4 MR. ESSENBURG: She said --MR. NESBITT: -- or the record? 5 6 MR. ESSENBURG: She said she got a --7 MR. NESBITT: CPS records. 8 MR. ESSENBURG: -- summarized report, summarized CPS --9 THE WITNESS: CPS records in the --10 MR. ESSENBURG: So she's not able to verify 11 12 whether 127 is the full content or just general or 13 something in between, so I'm asking the specific question. 14 MR. NESBITT: I'm going to direct the witness not to answer as to what was contained in CPS records based 15 16 on the statutory exception --17 MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. MR. NESBITT: -- for disclosure and 18 19 dissemination of those records. 20 MR. ESSENBURG: So --MR. NESBITT: I believe it also covers 21 disclosure and dissemination of information within those 2.2 23 records. 24 If you want to ask her about specific items 25 of which she was aware, that's fine.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 123

- 1 MR. ESSENBURG: Okay.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Jennifer, were you aware
- 3 whether there was drug paraphernalia found, including a
- 4 marijuana bong, in the mother's possession?
- 5 A. The father alleged that during the study.
- 6 Q. Irrespective of what the father alleged, were you
- 7 aware that there was drug paraphernalia found, including a
- 8 marijuana bong, in the mother's possession that was tested
- 9 positive for residue?
- 10 A. That's the person making the report alleging that.
- 11 So the father also alleged that, and the mother -- at some
- 12 point. I didn't talk to them about it, but it was in
- 13 another record -- I believe Dr. Siegel's old custody
- 14 evaluation -- that he said the mother admitted at that time
- 15 to having a bong that was an ex -- her ex-husband's.
- 16 **Q.** Okay.
- 17 A. I believe that's the information.
- 18 Q. Were you aware that that bong tested positive for
- 19 cocaine?
- 20 A. No.
- 21 Q. Were you aware that the bong tested positive for
- 22 marijuana?
- 23 A. I don't know either of those to be true.
- Q. Okay. Did you ever investigate or try to find out
- 25 the truth of whether that -- whether that was true or not?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 124

- 1 A. No. CPS examined that issue.
- 2 Q. Did you feel that you had no obligation to find
- 3 out that truth as to whether or not she had been abusing
- 4 cocaine?
- 5 A. I -- I don't know how I could have found that.
- 6 This report was in 2017, and I was doing my report a full
- 7 year later.
- 8 Q. Okay. Did you ever say, Ms. Ngo, did you ever do
- 9 cocaine?
- 10 A. I asked the question about drugs, drug history --
- 11 Q. And what --
- 12 A. -- for all clients.
- 13 Q. What was her response?
- 14 A. That she used Ecstasy as a younger person.
- 15 O. Did she list "I used cocaine" ever or make a
- 16 statement to that effect?
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 18 A. No.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me turn your attention
- 20 to -- I think this is Page 18, Jennifer.
- 21 A. Uh-huh.
- 22 Q. He -- I'm assuming "he" being the son. Is that
- 23 what you're referring to there? "He stated the mother
- 24 'eats'" --
- 25 A. Yes.

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 125

- 1 Q. -- "'sleeping pills'" --
- 2 A. Yes.
- Q. -- "and he knows this because the father told him;
- 4 Lauriston asked the worker what the mother said during her
- 5 CPS interview and was told that she could not share that
- 6 with Lauriston."
- 7 Do you see -- did you write all of that?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. Did you believe this boy when he said mother ate
- 10 sleeping pills?
- 11 A. I believe that the father told him that.
- 12 Q. Do you believe the mother ate sleeping pills?
- 13 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 15 A. She said she had been prescribed something for
- 16 sleep, so yes, or something for anxiety that she took at
- 17 bedtime.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you agree that custody
- 19 evaluators are not any better of assessing the truth than
- 20 other people?
- 21 A. Well, I know the bias is that we think we're
- 22 probably better just from repetition, but statistically
- 23 we're probably not better than anyone else, no.
- Q. Have you ever been wrong before?
- 25 A. Sure.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 126

- 1 Q. Ever made wrong recommendations?
- 2 A. I'm sure I have.
- Q. Are all your recommendations from custody
- 4 evaluations right, in your opinion?
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 6 A. No.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Sometimes you guys get it
- 8 wrong, fair to say?
- 9 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 11 A. Sure.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me turn your attention to
- 13 Page 19. I'll put the highlight up here so it's easier for
- 14 you to read. "The staff at the advocacy" -- on Page 19 it
- 15 states, "The staff at the advocacy center noted the father
- left the facility with the child in the front seat of his
- 17 car without any safety seat or booster seat."
- 18 Did you ever see that?
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. What is the date of this allegation, or at least
- 21 the year if you don't know any --
- 22 A. So -- I'm sorry, where is it on Page 19?
- 23 Q. I can go back and --
- 24 A. Okay. Here it is. So -- okay. So this would
- 25 have been -- the advocacy center is who does the forensic

Page 127

- 1 interview, which is how I knew that the child had been
- 2 forensically interviewed, and that would have been in the
- 3 July 2017 investigation. I don't know if it was --
- 4 Q. And how --
- 5 A. -- that month or subsequent.
- 6 Q. How old is the boy in July of 2017?
- 7 A. He would have been five, I believe, because he was
- 8 born in -- no, six.
- 9 Q. Six years?
- 10 A. Would have been six, yes.
- 11 Q. Do you normally have a six-year-old ride in a
- 12 booster seat?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. Okay.
- 15 A. And he should have been in the backseat.
- 16 Q. Okay. And who was -- did you find out who, quote,
- 17 the staff was that said that?
- 18 A. No.
- 19 Q. Did you believe that was the routine and practice
- 20 of the father?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. Did you ever see this boy yourself not having a
- 23 **seatbelt on?**
- 24 A. I saw him in the front seat of a vehicle with no
- 25 booster seat.

Page 128

- 1 Q. Okay. When did you do that?
- 2 On the video on Channel 8 when he had the cookies Α.
- 3 and --
- 4 Okay. Q.
- -- the interview. Α.
- 6 They showed him putting the child in the
- 7 front seat.
- 8 Q. What month and year?
- 9 That would have been when my report was issued, so Α.
- that would have been -- I don't know when the interview was 10
- taped, but it was on or about the end of June 2019 or the 11
- 12 beginning of July 2019.
- 13 Okay. Did you see him yourself, other than that
- one time? 14
- I did see photographs, though, other 15 Α.
- photographs where that had occurred. 16
- 17 Q. Do you have that as part of your records in the --
- Yes, I believe so. 18 Α.
- 19 -- part of your publication of July of 2019 or
- 20 part of your publication of October of 2019?
- 21 I believe it's in the photographs for July of
- 2019. 2.2
- 23 Q. Okay. Do you believe that the father has been
- 24 making up these things to get the mother in trouble?
- 25 example, getting into the bathtub naked with her brother or

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6721

Page 129

- 1 biting the boy directly on the back, do you think the
- 2 father was making that up?
- 3 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 4 A. I have my suspicion that the sexual abuse
- 5 allegation is greatly exaggerated and --
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me stop you there a
- 7 second.
- 8 Do you believe the father made an accusation
- 9 of sexual abuse?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. What forms the basis of your facts that leads you
- 12 to conclude that he made a sexual abuse allegation?
- 13 A. Because I think the child may have said something
- 14 about the uncle washing his hair out, and he used that as a
- 15 way to retaliate against the mother. He was very upset
- 16 with her at that time.
- 17 Q. What was your -- you said he made a sexual abuse
- 18 allegation. Specifically, factually, what is the act of
- 19 the sexual abuse alleged by the father?
- 20 A. That instead of the uncle washing his hair out,
- 21 that he was naked in the tub with him.
- 22 O. You understand that's not a sexual abuse
- 23 **allegation?**
- 24 A. It was --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 130

- 1 A. It was behavior of a sexual nature that I think
- 2 the father hoped would lead to an investigation --
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) How do you --
- 4 A. -- in retaliation.
- 5 Q. Okay. You believe that if the father says a
- 6 priest in training is naked in the bathtub with a five-,
- 7 six-, seven-year-old boy, that's a sexual abuse allegation?
- 8 A. It's enough to get a CPS case investigating, which
- 9 is, I think, what his intention was.
- 10 Q. Do you think that was inappropriate?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 12 A. To make up an allegation? Yes.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you think he made up that
- 14 allegation that the priest was naked in the bathtub with a
- 15 **boy?**
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. What facts do you have to -- tell this Court what
- 18 facts that you have that forms your belief.
- 19 A. That when the father saw the original thing that
- 20 was told to CPS didn't work, he continued to change --
- 21 Q. I'm sorry, I don't know what you -- "that didn't
- 22 work," can you explain what you mean by that?
- 23 A. So the father made these allegations; CPS got
- 24 involved.
- Q. What are the allegations, as to your

Page 131

1 understanding?

- 2 A. That the uncle was in the tub with the child.
- 3 Q. Okay.
- 4 A. That opened an investigation. I think he believes
- 5 that the workers weren't taking that seriously enough. It
- 6 wasn't having the intended effect, which is why he made all
- 7 these phone calls to the worker in an attempt to sway her.
- 8 Then when that didn't work, he started
- 9 calling the police investigator and putting the child on
- 10 the phone with what the investigator described, he didn't
- 11 say specifically, but increasingly serious allegations. In
- 12 other words, the story was changing in a more serious
- 13 fashion in an attempt to get the police to file charges
- 14 criminally against the uncle. That was the father's
- 15 intent.
- 16 Q. Did the uncle admit giving this boy a bath?
- 17 A. No.
- 18 Q. He didn't even say that he was participating in a
- 19 bath with the boy?
- 20 A. He said the mother asked him to walk in after the
- 21 child was bathing, check to make sure he had rinsed all the
- 22 shampoo out of his hair, and he left the bathroom.
- 23 Q. You understand that the boy specifically
- 24 contradicted all of that?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 132

- 1 Q. So as I understand it, you believe this father
- 2 tried to get the mother in trouble with CPS authorities by
- 3 alleging that this man was in the bathtub with his son
- 4 naked; and then when that didn't work, he added additional
- 5 facts of soaping his privates or something to that effect?
- 6 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is that right?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. And when -- and then there were other stuff, but
- 10 you don't know what the other things were, just increasing
- 11 communications with the investigators and workers?
- 12 A. The investigator -- the police investigator was so
- 13 upset that I believe he may have contacted CPS to make a
- 14 claim of emotional abuse by the father.
- 15 Q. Did they ever investigate the father for emotional
- 16 abuse, to your --
- 17 A. No.
- 18 Q. -- knowledge?
- 19 Okay. Did you ever look at the
- 20 investigator's notes or video of him and the boy talking?
- 21 A. There was no video; it was phone calls.
- Q. No. I'm talking about the forensic interview that
- 23 the investigator conducted with the boy, the subject of
- 24 this suit.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.

Page 133

- 1 A. No.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Wouldn't that have been
- 3 prudent of one of the things for you to find out and
- 4 investigate?
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 6 A. I would love to get that. As I said before, in
- 7 the 13 years I've been doing this, I have never received
- 8 video or notes from a forensic investigation ever. They
- 9 don't like to release those.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me show you Page 20, in
- 11 particular a highlighted portion here. When the boy came
- 12 in with his stepfather, you wrote on Page -- what did I
- 13 **say?**
- 14 A. 20.
- 15 **Q. 22?**
- 16 A. 20.
- 17 Q. I'm sorry, 20?
- 18 A. Uh-huh.
- 19 Q. "When choosing games, Logan made the comment
- 'these are baby games' and the stepfather said, "no,
- 21 they're big kid games'."
- 22 Is it the stepfather that said that?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 21. Well,
- 25 that's actually not it. You wrote in there, "There's" --

Page 134

- on Page 21, "There is no way there can be resolution to the
- 2 facts after so much time has passed, yet both parents are
- 3 still affected by their narrative about the incident."
- 4 And in there you're describing the mother
- 5 getting run over by the car; is that correct?
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. So you did not find Dr. Siegel's letter persuasive
- 8 that she was committing perjury, what I'd --
- 9 MR. NESBITT: Object- --
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- previously marked as
- 11 Petitioner's Exhibit 104 --
- MR. NESBITT: Object- --
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- is that correct?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 15 O. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You can answer that. And let
- 16 me put it in your --
- 17 A. Okay. And, I'm sorry, what was your question
- 18 about this document?
- 19 Q. You took the position that there's no way there
- 20 can be a resolution of the facts as to whether or not the
- 21 mother had run over herself or the father committed that,
- 22 and one of the reasons, you did not find Dr. Siegel's
- 23 letter identified as Petitioner's Exhibit Number 104
- 24 persuasive; is that correct?
- 25 A. I believe what Dr. Siegel says in this as far as

Page 135

- 1 what he -- his understanding of the incident is likely the
- 2 truth of what happened because his custody evaluation was
- 3 done close in proximity in time to the actual incident. So
- 4 I believe that what he understood happened is likely what
- 5 happened.
- 6 Q. Okay. And then you would agree with me you had an
- 7 audio as part of your social study -- sorry, part of your
- 8 social study that -- where the mother admitted that it was
- 9 an accident, did you not?
- 10 It's toward the back, if it helps you. Yeah,
- 11 right there.
- 12 A. Yeah.
- 13 Q. Let me show you what I marked as Petitioner's
- 14 Exhibit 108, which purports to be a copy of what you're
- 15 looking at there at the back --
- 16 A. Right.
- 17 Q. 108 to -- the green tab there --
- 18 A. Yeah.
- 19 Q. -- is where the conversation is.
- 20 A. All right.
- 21 Q. Page 5, if you want to --
- 22 A. Uh-huh.
- Q. -- turn your attention to that.
- 24 You received that as part of your custody
- 25 evaluation?

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 136

- 1 Α. Yes.
- 2 And did the mother provide that to you? 0.
- 3 Α. Yes.
- 4 And so she had a transcript that she provided to Q.
- you, and the transcript appears to be dated January 12th, 5
- 6 2019, on what's been marked Petitioner's Exhibit 108.
- And she says -- Mother -- she says, "Listen
- 8 to mom; I get in" -- something -- "maybe I didn't close it
- 9 right."
- 10 Do you see that?
- 11 Α. Yes.
- 12 So she, at least her words talking to her son, 0.
- 13 is -- she's not claiming the father ran over her; she says
- that she might have not closed the door right, to her son? 14
- And my -- my point about this is that she 15 Α.
- shouldn't have told the child that information. 16
- 17 child already knows about this information, her perspective
- is protecting the father by not saying what she believes to 18
- 19 have happened. She's actually telling the child a scrubbed
- 20 version of what she believes happened.
- 21 0. Okay. Alternatively she could be using the
- 22 inflammatory version saying, at the point of the custody
- 23 evaluation, that he tried to run over and kill me --
- 24 MR. WHIDDON: Objection --
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- right?

Amy Massey & Associates

817-447-6721 1-866-4MASSEY 817-447-6491 FAX

Page 137

- 1 MR. WHIDDON: -- form.
- 2 A. She could be, but it sounds like in this that
- 3 she's doing what's best for the child.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So Dr. Siegel says it's an
- 5 accident; she describes it to her child as an -- it was an
- 6 accident about getting run over; is that correct?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. And there's CPS records where she admitted to
- 9 being run over as an accident; is there not?
- 10 A. I believe so.
- 11 Q. Okay. And also Dr. Siegel's own social study
- 12 described it, not in a letter like I showed you in
- 13 Petitioner's Exhibit 104, but in his social study narrative
- 14 that it was an accident; is that correct?
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. There's no police allegations of attempted murder?
- 17 A. There was a police report, but it was just about
- 18 the car --
- 19 **Q. Yeah.**
- 20 A. -- hitting the fence.
- 21 **Q. Yeah.**
- 22 Was there ever a police allegation or
- 23 statements where -- alleging that the father tried to pull
- 24 the mother out of the car and run her over?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Page 138

- 1 A. Not that I know of.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. No hospital records
- 3 backing the mother's story up?
- 4 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 6 A. Not that I know of.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You didn't contact the nanny
- 8 that was there at the time?
- 9 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 10 A. I had information from her about the incident.
- 11 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And what was the information
- 12 you had?
- 13 A. Well, the father stated that she was present and
- 14 that he -- she made a claim and I think it was in
- 15 Dr. Siegel's report as well that she was inside the house
- 16 with the father when they heard the loud noise, which was
- 17 the accident occurring.
- 18 Q. So let me understand this. You've got an
- 19 eyewitness that was there that says the father was inside
- 20 the house when it happened?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. You've got Dr. Siegel saying that she committed
- 23 perjury, that didn't -- that's not what she reported;
- 24 you've got an audio where the mother says that --
- 25 explaining to the child that it was an accident, that she

Page 139

- didn't close the door right; you've got a CPS report that
- 2 says she admitted to getting run over by herself; you've
- 3 got a social study of Dr. Siegel saying that it was an
- 4 accident; you've got no police allegation, no hospital
- 5 records to contradict that; and your position to the Court
- 6 today is there's no way there can be a resolution to the
- 7 facts after so much time has passed, yet both parents are
- 8 still affected by their narrative about the incident? Is
- 9 that your position to the Court?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 11 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 12 A. Yes.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 14 A. I don't believe it's what either parent believes
- 15 now, which is the father believes the mother was attempting
- 16 suicide, is what he says now, which I don't think is
- 17 accurate; the mother says it was the father trying to kill
- 18 her. Again, don't think that's accurate either, which is
- 19 why I mentioned that I'm not going to be the decider in
- 20 that issue with this case.
- 21 Q. She took that position after this -- the mother
- 22 took the position that the father took her out of the car
- 23 and allowed the car to run over her after the custody
- evaluation started in 2018; is that correct?
- 25 A. I -- I don't know the timeline on that. I know

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 140

- 1 that she was going to a counselor, and the counselor said
- 2 that she and the mother were working on it, but I don't
- 3 know the time frame for that counseling.
- 4 Q. And as a matter of fact, it certainly was after
- 5 this lawsuit got started for custody, isn't it? Isn't that
- 6 correct?
- 7 A. I don't --
- 8 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 9 A. I don't know.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 11 A. It was after 2013 when the incident occurred, and
- 12 I don't know the timeline on that.
- 13 Q. Okay. And you agree with me that the custody
- issue was resolved by Dr. Siegel in an agreed order back in
- 15 **2015?**
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 17 A. 2014 or '15, that sounds correct.
- 18 MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. Do y'all want to take
- 19 a bathroom break?
- MR. NESBITT: Sure do.
- 21 (Recess from 2:10 p.m. to 2:14 p.m.)
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Jennifer, we're back on the
- 23 record.
- 24 A. Okay.
- 25 Q. Rochelle Ritzi, she didn't fill out the forms that

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 141

- 1 you asked her to send back, but you-all communicated with
- 2 emails; is that right?
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. And are -- those emails, did you say, were part of
- 5 the published October 2019 documents?
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. Can you remind me what the -- as best you can
- 8 recall, the content of those emails were?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 There were a couple of topics specifically
- 11 regarding the mother's and father's communication with each
- 12 other. As I understand it, both parents had a shared
- 13 access schedule, so week on/week off so that they were each
- 14 bringing the child to the counselor, to Rochelle Ritzi, on
- 15 their weeks. So she would have contact with both parents
- 16 at the time of their week of access for the child's
- 17 appointments, so -- and then they also communicated to her,
- 18 and then they would cc the other parent so that it was a
- 19 three-way communication.
- 20 So some of those conversations were forwarded
- 21 to me and to Vickie Alexander for informational purposes;
- 22 in other words, what kind of issues were going on currently
- 23 with the parents. One of them was regarding a field day
- 24 for the child and the conflict the parents were having,
- 25 just so that we would have that information.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 142

- 1 And then another one was about another issue
- 2 with the child, and I can't recall exactly right now. And
- 3 then she would -- a couple of times she wrote a little
- 4 paragraph about kind of what she's seeing as far as what
- 5 she's telling them to do, how she's directing them for that
- 6 specific issue.
- 7 Q. What was she seeing?
- 8 A. She was seeing that both parents were -- had
- 9 instances where they put the child in the middle of the
- 10 conflict, and that that was a concern for her, and that she
- 11 was giving them direct feedback on how to not do that.
- 12 Q. Did it impact you in any way that the mother
- was -- let's assume the father was, but did it impact you
- 14 that the mother was putting the child in the conflict?
- 15 A. Sure. Yes.
- 16 Q. And that was from the child's therapist?
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. Did she describe what the mother was doing?
- 19 A. I don't -- I think it was a broad statement about
- 20 how she sees that both parents are doing that on occasion.
- 21 Q. Okay. Did she make any recommendations to you
- 22 about possession periods or how much time each spent with
- 23 the other?
- A. Oh, no, nothing like that.
- 25 Q. Okay. Did you get the sense from Ms. Ritzi that

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 143

- she didn't like the father?
- 2 A. No. No. I think she found the father to be
- 3 challenging. He was more challenging of the rules that she
- 4 had set up and the boundaries for how to make contact with
- 5 her, for example.
- 6 Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 21 of
- 7 your custody evaluation where it states that, "The father's
- 8 perspective appears to be that only he can meet all of the
- 9 child's needs."
- 10 Do you see that?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. Do you believe the mother's able to meet all of
- 13 the child's need?
- 14 A. Not every parent is able to meet all of the
- 15 child's needs of any child.
- 16 Q. Is it your position that the child needs both
- 17 parents --
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. -- to meet the child's needs?
- A. Absolutely.
- 21 Q. What role does the father have in fulfilling the
- 22 child's needs?
- 23 A. I think both parents have an equal role in
- 24 guidance; in providing physical, emotional, mental support;
- 25 in financially supporting the child; in providing learning

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 144

- 1 and guidance, love and material things; all kinds of
- 2 parenting lessons. I think both parents have different
- 3 parts of that to provide to children.
- 4 Q. What forms the factual basis of your belief that
- 5 you believe the father believes he's the only one that can
- 6 meet the child's needs?
- 7 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 8 MR. ESSENBURG: That was badly worded, wasn't
- 9 it?
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me restate that so it's
- 11 not so goobered up and embarrassing on the transcript.
- 12 What forms your belief that the father
- 13 believes he's the only one that can meet the child's needs?
- 14 A. He states that -- not in those exact words, but he
- 15 states that he is the better parent, he knows more, he --
- in various forms, he's stated that himself to me.
- 17 Q. Anything else?
- 18 A. Not that I can think of.
- 19 Q. When did he state that?
- 20 A. In his written materials that he provided, in the
- 21 interviews, when he talked to CPS. I mean, he seems to
- 22 communicate that to others routinely, not just in the -- in
- 23 the custody evaluation.
- 24 Q. So we could look to see -- did he write you a
- 25 narrative as to what his perspective is about why he should

Page 145

- 1 be primary?
- 2 A. Yes.
- Q. And is that one of the places -- that was his big
- 4 expression of why he should be primary, as you understood
- 5 it?
- 6 A. Yes.
- Q. And so did you interpret that document where
- 8 his -- he's giving you the reasons why he should be primary
- 9 as where he can meet all the child's needs?
- 10 A. That along with, I mean, he wrote me a letter,
- 11 there were emails. That's how he speaks about the child to
- 12 the counselor.
- 13 Q. Is the narrative a big piece of his attitude?
- 14 A. I would say it's part.
- 15 Q. Okay. Would you surmise that if he's writing you
- a narrative for all of the reasons he should be primary,
- 17 that would be a pretty big representative of his attitude
- 18 about -- and his perspective?
- 19 A. Sure.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 21 A. Sure. I expect it to be.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me show you Page 21. Let
- 23 me put that up on the screen there. It says on Page 21,
- "It is clear the father's focus is on proving the mother to
- 25 be a detriment to the child and to use any means possible

Page 146

- 1 to do this; he often engages professionals in order to use
- 2 them to prove and document some facet of his agenda
- 3 regarding the mother; furthermore, the father appears to
- 4 say one thing and do another in an attempt to bait and
- 5 manipulate others."
- 6 You wrote that?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. Okay. And when you described "engages
- 9 professionals," you're describing him talking to CPS and
- 10 the police and counselors; is that correct?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. And you think --
- 13 A. Primarily. Also schools.
- 14 Q. And schools?
- 15 A. Uh-huh.
- 16 Q. Anybody else?
- 17 A. Nobody that I could think of offhand.
- 18 Q. And CPS had to do with the investigations that
- 19 were ruled out; and the police, the sexual abuse that was
- 20 not prosecuted; is that correct?
- 21 A. Yes.
- Q. And then I'm not understanding or aware of
- 23 anything regarding teachers. What -- who did he talk to as
- 24 a teacher?
- 25 A. The mother indicated that the -- that the father's

Page 147

- 1 made allegations about her that he -- to the school, trying
- 2 to say that the child doesn't want to visit the mother,
- 3 that he tries to convince people of the school of his
- 4 wishes over the mother's wishes.
- 5 Q. You believe -- your belief was that the father was
- 6 trying to manipulate the system?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. Do you believe the mother was trying to manipulate
- 9 the system?
- 10 A. I don't know in what way you mean.
- 11 Q. In the same way that the father was trying to
- 12 manipulate the system.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 14 A. No.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Are you aware that the
- 16 mother and the stepfather reported the -- to the police
- 17 that the father had potentially physically abused the
- 18 child?
- 19 A. Yes. I was given that information just prior to
- 20 filing the report, I believe.
- 21 Q. As a matter of fact, I sent you a letter saying,
- 22 Hey, I've got some concerns, did I not?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. Let me show you what's marked as Petitioner's
- 25 Exhibit 106 and ask you if you recognize the letter that I

Page 148

- 1 sent to you regarding the issue of the mother and
- 2 stepfather alleging physical abuse by the father.
- A. Yes. This is the other issue that Rochelle Ritzi
- 4 forwarded, was the -- the narrative between the parents
- 5 regarding this issue.
- 6 Q. Did you -- let me show you the police report
- 7 regarding that incident that's been marked Petitioner
- 8 Exhibit 137 and ask to see if you recognize this.
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. Have you seen that before?
- 11 A. Yes. I was provided this document.
- 12 Q. What was your understanding that -- of the mother
- and stepfather's allegation on May 1st -- I believe it's
- 14 May 1st.
- 15 A. May 6th is the --
- 16 **Q.** May 6th.
- 17 A. -- is the --
- 18 Q. The police incident report?
- 19 A. Uh-huh. Yes.
- 20 Q. Okay. What was your understanding of the
- 21 allegation by the mother and stepfather on May 6th of --
- 22 A. I apologize, it was printed on May 6th. The
- 23 incident was taken down on 4-17, April 17th, 2019.
- Q. Okay. What was your understanding of the
- 25 allegation by the mother and the stepfather in April 2019?

Page 149

- 1 A. That Mr. Cottingham said he found an injury on the
- 2 child and --
- 3 Q. Was the mother also reported as a complainant?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. Okay. So the mother and stepfather are both
- 6 complainants in the incident report?
- 7 A. Correct.
- 8 Q. And what was -- explain to me again what the
- 9 allegation was.
- 10 A. That the child had an injury to his upper left
- 11 forearm, minor swelling and bruising, and that the incident
- 12 was noticed after an exchange from the father.
- 13 Q. Okay. And they complained to the Highland Park
- 14 Police?
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. Okay. Let me show you what's marked as
- 17 Petitioner's Exhibit 139, a hospital report on the --
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. -- same incident.
- 20 Did you recognize that?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. Did the mother and stepfather take this child to
- 23 the hospital?
- A. Reportedly, yes.
- Q. And did they investigate or examine his injury?

Page 150

- 1 A. Medical Center of Plano, yes.
- Q. Did that result in a potential CPS investigation?
- 3 A. Potentially, yes.
- 4 Q. Okay. Now, you had concerns about the father
- 5 engaging professionals to harass or abuse the mother.
- 6 Would you agree with me that if that was unfounded that the
- 7 mother is doing the same thing of using the professionals
- 8 to harass the father?
- 9 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 10 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 11 A. She may be.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Why is her use of calling the
- 13 police and putting this child through another hospital
- 14 interview any different than what is reported that the
- 15 father's using the professionals in the same way? Why is
- 16 hers different from his?
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 18 A. It's not, although there was an actual injury.
- 19 But other than that, I don't --
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) There was an actual injury for
- 21 the bite marks, wasn't there?
- 22 A. I thought you were referring to the sexual abuse
- 23 allegation.
- Q. No. Well, all of them, but --
- 25 A. Okay.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 151

- 1 Q. -- I'm asking if there's -- you determined in the
- 2 bite marks you couldn't tell.
- 3 You determined in the sexual abuse that it
- 4 was just ruled out but that he was engaging professionals.
- 5 Here they're engaging the Highland Park
- 6 Police and the hospital. Why is the mother's exercise of
- 7 the police department and hospital any different than what
- 8 the father's was?
- 9 A. It's not, in this instance.
- 10 Q. I did not see this part of it written up anywhere
- in your custody evaluation.
- 12 A. No.
- 13 Q. Why is that?
- 14 A. I was already primarily done with the report.
- 15 Q. So you didn't feel the need to supplement your
- 16 report to account for these facts?
- 17 A. No, I didn't add these specific facts.
- 18 Q. Well, would --
- 19 THE REPORTER: I'm sorry, did you say --
- 20 THE WITNESS: I didn't add these specific
- 21 facts.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You would agree with me that
- 23 you published the report on July 8th of --
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 Q. -- 2019 and you received my letter on May 21st of

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 152

- 1 2019, did you not?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. So why didn't you insert these facts or account
- 4 for these facts in your custody evaluation?
- 5 A. I don't know.
- 6 Q. Is it possible the mother's guilty of the same
- 7 things the father is doing in using professionals to her
- 8 agenda to prove and document her problems with the father?
- 9 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 10 A. She may be.
- 11 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And that it's -- is it
- 12 possible the mother is also manipulating the professionals?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 14 A. I don't know.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You seem to know that about
- 16 the father.
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 18 A. I had a lot more evidence for the father.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Let me turn your
- 20 attention to Page 22 of your report, and in particular this
- 21 sentence here: "Over time" -- it says, "Over time, the
- 22 stepfather has frequently become the one communicating with
- 23 and interacting with the father, which he has done at times
- in an angry manner."
- 25 **Do you see that?**

Page 153 1 Α. Yes. 2 0. Did you believe that? 3 Α. Yes. 4 Is it an unhealthy part of the mother's Q. 5 circumstances to have a stepfather that dislikes the 6 father? Yes, it's not the optimal situation at all. Α. 8 Q. In your opinion, is it possible that the 9 stepfather may express alienating behavior towards the father because he doesn't like him? 10 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form. 11 12 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 13 Α. It may. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What impact did that have on 14 Q. your custody evaluation? 15 Objection, form. 16 MR. WHIDDON: 17 Α. Well, I raised it as a concern about the mother because -- and her household for that reason --18 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So --20 -- talked about it specifically. Α. 21 Q. So it was a concern for you? 22 Α. Absolutely. 23 Q. And it was a negative concern that the mother had 24 that type of -- that the stepfather was angry and,

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

therefore, the child would be exposed to an angry

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

25

Page 154

- 1 stepfather?
- 2 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would giving the mother more
- 5 time with the child put the son in a position to be exposed
- 6 more to the stepfather?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. Wouldn't giving the father more time and away from
- 9 the stepfather and the mother kind of offset that?
- 10 A. No, because the --
- 11 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 12 A. The instances in which the stepfather is angry is
- 13 when the father is present. So whether the child -- the
- 14 child's access schedule is -- is beside the point there.
- 15 It's not related to that.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) The truth is, you don't know
- 17 that to be a fact, do you?
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. Well, the instances that I had in which the
- 20 stepfather was outwardly angry in front of the child,
- 21 the -- the information I had about that were times when the
- 22 father was present.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Who did you get that
- 24 information from?
- 25 A. From both parents in regards to the hockey

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 155

- 1 situation.
- 2 Q. And did the father say, I went and provoked the
- 3 stepfather? Or did that come from the mother or
- 4 stepfather?
- 5 A. Neither one of them used that language.
- 6 Q. Did they use words to that effect?
- 7 A. Not really. I was the one who, after receiving
- 8 information about both perspectives, determined that it was
- 9 that type of exchange.
- 10 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 22 of your
- 11 custody evaluation where you write, "The child appears to
- 12 have been prepped by the father in order to make this
- 'choice' himself, and to tell others about it at the
- 14 father's direction."
- 15 **Do you see that?**
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. What forms the basis of facts that made you --
- 18 that -- wherein you typed that sentence up?
- 19 A. Because when I interviewed the child, every single
- 20 time I asked him, How do you know that, he said, My dad
- 21 told me.
- But then sometimes he would say, Oh, and I
- 23 remember it too; or, I think I remember that.
- 24 But he clearly stated that the father had
- 25 told him the negative information about the mother.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 156

- 1 Q. So you believed it all came from the father or
- 2 mostly came from the father?
- 3 A. I believe the -- the negative perception about the
- 4 mother came from the father, yes.
- 5 Q. Okay. You would agree with me that you weren't
- 6 there to know, one way or the other --
- 7 A. No.
- 8 Q. -- what the father did or what the father told the
- 9 son, other than what you perceived to be when you're
- 10 talking to him?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 12 A. I mean, he told me. I believed the child when he
- 13 said the father told him that information because there was
- 14 no other way -- some of the information, there was no other
- 15 way for him to know it. He was telling me things that
- 16 occurred before his birth --
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So when --
- 18 A. -- for example.
- 19 Q. -- he's saying "I remember it," what keeps you
- 20 from believing that he did remember it?
- 21 A. Because the way he said it was that he didn't
- 22 remember it. It was very questioning and unsure, is how he
- 23 sounded when he said that. I think the father is telling
- 24 him, You remember that, don't you. And I think that's what
- 25 is prompting him to use that sentence with me.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 157 1 Q. Were you ever present when the father --2 Α. No. -- was saying, And you remember that, don't you? 3 Q. 4 Α. (Witness shakes head.) So you're guessing that the father said that and 5 Q. 6 told the son. Is that fair to say? I'm using my --Α. 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection --9 -- clinical opinion to surmise that, yes. Α. 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But you don't have personal knowledge of that; is that correct? 11 12 Α. I wasn't present, so no. 13 Q. No, you don't have personal knowledge? 14 Α. Correct. 15 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form. MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 16 17 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Have you talked with others that have spent a lot more time with the child and father 18 19 other than the -- other than the mother and the father? For example, friends of Lauriston Crockett or teachers that 20 21 were around the mother and the child or family members of 2.2 Lauriston Crockett? 23 Α. I mean, I received three personal references from 24 each of the adults who -- and in those they talked about 25 what they have observed between the child and the adults.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 158

- 1 Q. Did any of them say, of the father's personal
- 2 references, that he -- the father manipulates this boy?
- 3 A. None of the father's said that.
- 4 Q. I'm sorry?
- 5 A. None of the father's personal references said
- 6 that.
- 7 Q. Did the mother's personal references say that the
- 8 father manipulated this boy?
- 9 A. I don't recall specifically. Well, one of the
- 10 personal references was the stepfather, so he talked a lot
- 11 about specific instances.
- 12 Q. He's the one that's angry, right?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 15 A. He's angry at the father, yes.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Would you consider
- 17 that, the fact that the stepfather's angry, a potential for
- 18 a lot of alienation in the future?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 20 A. Possibly.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you need some time to chase
- 22 that down? We can take a break.
- 23 A. Yes.
- MR. ESSENBURG: So let's go off the record,
- 25 give her an opportunity to chase her references down.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 159 (Recess taken from 2:37 p.m. to 2:39 p.m.) 1 2 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) We're back on the record. 0. any of the mother's three references allege that the father 3 4 manipulated the child? 5 Α. Yes. 6 0. And who's that? Natasha Sate, S-a-t-e. Α. 8 Q. And who is that? That is a mother of another child that Lauriston 9 Α. goes to school with. 10 11 Q. Okay. And she --12 Α. 13 Q. What did she say about that? She said that, based on what she has seen, the 14 Α. father has an abnormal need for control and he wants to 15 inflict emotional pain and punishment toward the mother, 16 17 that he's created/manipulated scenarios to alienate the child from his mother. 18 Did she give any specifics? 19 Q. 20 Α. No. 21 Q. Is she a psychologist? 22 Α. No. 23 Q. Did you talk with her? 24 No. Α. 25 And then Guadalupe Ortega who is -- they've

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 160

- 1 known each other for 19 years, and she talked about the
- 2 father's anger issues, his toxic behavior and emotional
- 3 She said, My main concern is that his hate for her,
- 4 meaning the mother, is so much greater than his love for
- the child. 5
- 6 Q. Okay. Do you believe the mother dislikes the
- father?
- 8 Α. Yes.
- 9 Q. Hates him?
- 10 I don't know if I would use that word, but
- 11 probably, yes.
- 12 Let me turn your attention to Page 22, in
- 13 particular the statement that says, "The mother appears to
- be insistent on calling the child Logan for two reasons." 14
- And the second reason you list is, "it further removes the 15
- child from the influence of the father." 16
- 17 Do you see that?
- 18 Α. Yes.
- 19 Isn't that alienating behavior? Q.
- 20 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 21 It's -- yes, it's a way for her to remove what she
- 22 sees as the father's negative influence from the child,
- 23 yes.
- 24 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What weight did you give to
- 25 the mother having an attitude that she wants to remove the

Page 161

- 1 child from the influence of the father?
- 2 A. The same weight I gave to the father who has the
- 3 same kind of ideas.
- 4 Q. Okay. So they're kind of similar in their
- 5 expressing behaviors that are alienating of the other?
- 6 A. Similar, but the intensity is different.
- Q. Okay. Would you agree with me that the father
- 8 cannot have a disagreement with himself? In other words,
- 9 if he wants to call this child Lauriston and the mother
- 10 agrees, then there's not much of a fight; if the mother
- 11 disagrees, then there can be a fight, right?
- 12 A. Correct.
- 13 Q. And is that -- is the mother part of the problem
- 14 on insisting that this child be called not his legal name
- 15 **but Logan?**
- 16 A. Well, I think the problem that comes in is that,
- 17 according to all of the records from when the child was
- 18 young, everyone called the child Logan except the father,
- 19 but he didn't seem to be upset by it. In other words, when
- 20 the mother lived in his home and the child lived in his
- 21 home, the nanny, who he employed -- he and the mother
- 22 employed, called the child Logan; the school he was
- 23 enrolled in initially he was called Logan.
- So the father didn't seem to have as much of
- 25 an issue with the name until it became an issue, and I

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 162

- 1 don't know at what time frame that happened, but at some
- 2 point around the time that this case was filed.
- 3 So it's not that Mother started being
- 4 insistent about it; it's that Father started being
- 5 insistent about it more recently because everybody in the
- 6 child's early development called the child Logan.
- Q. Okay. In reviewing Dr. Siegel's custody
- 8 evaluation, do you -- did you determine that, in fact, he
- 9 did some psychological testing on the parties?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. And would you agree with me that, in his
- 12 psychological testing, after all the smoke cleared,
- 13 Dr. Siegel recommended these parties have equal custody?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. What weight did you give to Dr. Siegel's
- 16 psychological testing and recommendation of equal custody?
- 17 A. It was very helpful for me to see.
- 18 Q. And you did not feel the need to request a mental
- 19 health evaluation of the parties?
- 20 A. I suggested they both do counseling, which is also
- 21 what Dr. Siegel had recommended.
- 22 Q. But that's not my question.
- 23 My question is: You did not feel the need to
- 24 request a mental health evaluation of the two parties?
- 25 A. No.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 163

- Q. Okay. One of the concerns that you had was -- and
- let me turn your attention to Page 23 of your report here,
- 3 make it easier for you. You said the first concern of the
- 4 father was that -- his narcissistic personality traits that
- 5 he evidences.
- 6 Do you see that?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. Would it concern you if the mother had
- 9 narcissistic qualities?
- 10 A. No. That's what Dr. Siegel's testing showed.
- 11 Q. So help the Court understand, if the mother's
- 12 expressing narcissistic qualities and the father expresses
- 13 narcissistic qualities, why isn't -- why aren't you giving
- 14 weight to the mother's narcissistic qualities?
- 15 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 17 A. It's not that I'm not giving weight to it; it's
- 18 that how they're impacting the child is much different.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. And how do you believe
- 20 her narcissistic qualities are impacting the child?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 22 A. As he described in his report, the mother tends to
- 23 be -- she tends to look toward a strong personality to gain
- 24 self worth; and then when -- if she is disappointed by that
- 25 person or that relationship sours, then she tends to be

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 164

- 1 more passive and critical of herself. And in that manner,
- 2 she's -- he described a narcissistic trait in that being
- 3 kind of self-centered about those issues.
- 4 He used some of the exact same words I use in
- 5 describing the father's more outward traits of narcissistic
- 6 personality, the self-aggrandizing, the being superior and
- 7 arrogant and haughty. Those were actually terms that I
- 8 noticed were actually in Dr. Siegel's report specifically.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And you didn't see any of
- 10 those qualities in the mother?
- 11 A. I saw the passivity and how that impacts her
- 12 relationship with others. Yes, I did.
- 13 Q. You did see -- I'm sorry, what did you determine
- 14 to be narcissistic personality traits?
- 15 A. I mean, I --
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 17 A. I'm just saying that I understand why Dr. Siegel
- 18 saw that in the testing. I didn't see as many indicators
- 19 of that issue currently.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did your -- did you believe
- 21 that the mother had narcissistic traits?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. And you defined them in your custody evaluation,
- 24 did you not?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 165

- 1 Q. And you took the position that he has narcissistic
- 2 personality traits --
- 3 A. Yes.
- Q. -- is that correct?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. And you defined those in your custody evaluation?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. You just believe that her narcissistic qualities
- 9 weren't as bad as the father's narcissistic qualities; is
- 10 that correct?
- 11 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 12 A. Not as noticeable and not impacting the child.
- 13 That's my primary source of issue with the father's traits,
- 14 is that they currently are directly impacting the child in
- 15 a negative way.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And when you say it impacted
- 17 the child, you're referring to, are you not, the fact that
- 18 the father has had some alienating behaviors?
- 19 A. That, and the -- I mean, all the specifics I
- 20 listed about how -- what he's -- how he's putting the child
- 21 in the middle and the negative talking about the mother,
- 22 all of those things.
- Q. So I'm trying to get a handle on that. So how --
- 24 his narcissism impacts it because he has more -- he has
- 25 alienating behaviors?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

		Page 166
1	Α.	Yes.
2	Q.	Putting child in the middle?
3	Α.	Uh-huh.
4	Q.	And what else?
5	Α.	Getting making these allegations that I believe
6	he knew	were false but doing them anyway.
7	Q.	Making allegations
8	Α.	Uh-huh.
9	Q.	he knew were false?
10		Which allegations did he know were false?
11	Α.	I think the sexual abuse allegation.
12	Q.	Any others?
13	Α.	The making the child question his relationship
14	with the	e mother. That's really damaging to children.
15	Q.	Anything else?
16	Α.	Trying to include, you know, other people in his
17	denigrating the mother so that all of the people in the	
18	child's	world have the same view of the mother, which is
19	negative	<u>.</u>
20	Q.	Anything else?
21	Α.	Interrupting people that the child does get a
22	benefit	from, such as the counselor.
23	Q.	What does that mean, interrupting the counselor?
24	А.	So the it appeared to me that the father's
25	pattern	was that he would take the child to counseling with

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 167

- 1 an idea that the -- that the counselor would speak for the
- 2 father or the child's wishes in court.
- And then when -- when they were calling the
- 4 father on his behaviors, he didn't like that. He would
- 5 stop seeing that counselor and get another counselor, and
- 6 that that's what Rochelle indicated, that the father's --
- 7 when she started setting limits with him and boundaries
- 8 about how he was to communicate with her, then he stopped
- 9 coming to -- bringing the child to appointments, making
- 10 excuses that didn't seem to be realistic, and it's because
- 11 the father didn't like the way that the boundaries were set
- 12 with him. It wasn't anything about was the counseling
- 13 benefiting the child; it was, was it benefiting the father.
- 14 Q. Okay. So let me understand, make sure I'm -- I've
- 15 got some clarity on what your position is.
- 16 Your position is that the father's
- 17 narcissistic qualities impacts the child more, and you gave
- 18 several reasons for that; is that correct?
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. The reasons are his alienating behavior is one;
- 21 his putting the child in the middle is two; making false
- 22 allegations is three and using third parties or
- 23 professionals to be --
- A. Uh-huh.
- 25 Q. -- involved is three?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 168

- 1 A. Yes.
- 2 Q. Number four, he causes the child to question the
- 3 relationship with the mother; and, five, he includes other
- 4 people and disparages the mother?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. And, six, he interrupts counseling or doesn't keep
- 7 boundaries that the counselor directs?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. And that is different from the mother; is that
- 10 correct?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 The father's focus is on -- to me is on
- 13 what's best for the father, not necessarily what's best for
- 14 the child. I believe the father has difficultly seeing the
- 15 difference.
- 16 Q. You would agree with me that the mother has
- 17 exhibited alienating behaviors?
- 18 A. Somewhat, yes.
- 19 Q. You would agree with me that you've testified that
- the mother has put the child in the middle?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. You would agree with me that she's disparaged the
- 23 **father?**
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 Q. You would agree with me that she has made

Page 169

- 1 allegations to police and hospitals that the father
- 2 physically abused the child?
- 3 A. I don't know that she said that there -- they said
- 4 there was no history of abuse, but, yes, they -- they
- 5 alluded to that.
- 6 Q. They made a police report?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. Said, Child's hurt, right?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. You would agree with me that the counseling has
- 11 been court ordered, or, if there was a concern, it's
- 12 reasonable for Father to be concerned about possible sexual
- 13 molestation, it's reasonable to take a child to a
- 14 counselor?
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. Why are her actions and narcissistic behaviors not
- impacting the child when she's doing a lot of the same
- 18 thing that he's doing?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 21 A. Because her focus is -- appears to be fear of --
- 22 she's afraid of the father. She's not trying to teach the
- 23 child to be afraid of the father or to dislike the father
- 24 or to not be a child of the father, and that is the
- 25 difference.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 170

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) I'm confused because one of
- 2 the things you said that she -- when she was describing
- 3 being run ov- -- by the father, that she was concerned that
- 4 someday he might cause physical harm to the child. Do you
- 5 recall that as part of your custody evaluation.
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 O. So isn't she also focused on the father
- 8 potentially hurting the child?
- 9 A. But she's not telling the child that; the father
- 10 is.
- 11 Q. So the difference is the father said some things
- 12 directly to the child, and the mother --
- 13 A. He's said --
- 14 Q. -- has not?
- 15 A. -- so many things directly to the child.
- 16 Q. And is it your position that the mother has not
- 17 said things to the child?
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. She has said negative things to the child.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 21 A. Not --
- 22 **Q.** So --
- 23 A. -- in the same way that the father has.
- Q. Okay. So it's quantity and quality, not
- 25 differences?

Page 171 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 1 2 Α. I would agree. 3 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You had had some concerns Q. 4 about his self-aggrandizement or talking himself up in the 5 custody evaluation; is that correct? 6 Α. Yes. And he described a bunch of stuff that was --Q. 8 appeared to be pretty impressive, but it didn't impress you a lot, did it? 9 10 MR. NESBITT: Objection --(BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is that --11 Q. 12 MR. NESBITT: -- form. 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- fair to say? Or --14 Well --15 Α. -- let me strike that. 16 Q. 17 That's an unfair question. He listed that he worked with SEAL Team 2? 18 19 Α. Six. I don't know why --Six? 20 Q. 21 Α. -- I wrote 2. 22 All right. And with Chris Kyle? Q. 23 Α. Yes. 24 And he did pet longevity vitamins? Q. 25 Α. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates

817-447-6721 1-866-4MASSEY 817-447-6491 FAX

Page 172

- 1 Q. That K-9 unit -- worked with the K-9 unit of the
- 2 Garland Police Department?
- 3 A. Yes.
- Q. And he had an anti-aging pet show?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. And you said that -- let me pull this up so you
- 7 can see what you wrote here -- "the father likely listed
- 8 these accomplishments and others in order to convince this
- 9 counselor or his high value and esteem in the community"?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. If it's truthful -- it's not bragging if it's the
- 12 truth, is it?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 15 A. It's the -- it's not one thing that he said, it's
- 16 the way that he said it in combination with the number of
- 17 name droppings and highlights of his life he gave that were
- 18 unusual.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So even if it's true, just the
- 20 way he said it caused you problems?
- 21 A. Caused me -- it got my attention, let's say.
- 22 **Q. Yeah.**
- 23 But what if it was true?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 25 A. I don't know that it isn't true.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 173

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. So it didn't make any
- difference to you whether it was true or not; it's kind of
- 3 the way he said it?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. Put you off?
- 6 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 7 A. He was entertaining. I enjoyed talking to him
- 8 actually.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Is it fair to say that
- 10 evaluators under Texas Family Code 107, 108, Subsection E,
- 11 must verify each fact and shall note the sources of
- verification in the report prepared under 107.113?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. So you're supposed to figure out whether people
- 15 are being truthful or not. Is that fair to say?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 17 A. In a general way. That doesn't mean I have to
- 18 validate every single thing that they have said to me.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 20 A. That's impossible.
- 21 Q. Did you validate whether or not he had worked with
- 22 the SEAL Team?
- 23 A. I don't know of a way to verify that. They're not
- 24 going to give me that information.
- Q. Is it fair to say you did not?

Page 174

- 1 A. No, I did not.
- 2 Q. Did you verify whether or not he worked with the
- 3 K-9 unit at the Garland Police Department?
- 4 A. No.
- 5 Q. Or was contacted by radio stations for his
- 6 anti-aging pet show?
- 7 A. Well, I believe that's true. He had that show. I
- 8 saw documents regarding that.
- 9 Q. Okay. So some of that you believe was true?
- 10 A. All of it may have been true. I have no
- 11 information to the contrary.
- 12 Q. You wrote in there, "He insisted that the child be
- 13 interviewed by CPS when having access at his home because
- the mother takes Xanax and she's asleep."
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. Did you have information that, in fact, she did
- 17 take Xanax?
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. So that was true, was it not?
- 20 A. It was. But the reason why he was telling CPS was
- 21 to denigrate the mother and also to manipulate to have the
- 22 interview at his house.
- Q. So what your position is, if somebody's abusing
- 24 drugs, it doesn't matter if you're denigrating somebody?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 175

- 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 2 A. There's no indication she was abusing anything.
- 3 That's not what he said.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 5 A. He was trying to force the interview to be at his
- 6 house where he can control the situation. That's what I
- 7 believe.
- 8 Q. How do you know that? What facts form your
- 9 belief?
- 10 A. Because why else would you say that, I need the
- interview to be at my house, if it weren't for a reason
- 12 other than you needed to supervise the interview.
- 13 Q. So you surmised the fact that he insisted on the
- 14 interview being at the house, that was --
- 15 A. Yes. Usually CPS doesn't let you choose. So I
- 16 don't know why she did let him, but she went along with
- 17 that. Usually they interview children at school without
- 18 either parent knowing, and it's for that reason, so that
- 19 neither parent can have influence over what happens or
- 20 they're prepped for the interview.
- 21 Q. And so you didn't question the fact that the
- 22 mother had taken Xanax? And was it your opinion that she
- 23 had taken Xanax in the past?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 A. Yes, she had been prescribed that.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 176

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did the father test negative
- 2 for all drugs?
- 3 A. I didn't do a drug test.
- Q. Did you receive drug tests or drug testing --
- 5 A. I --
- 6 Q. -- information?
- 7 A. -- believe so for both parents, and they were
- 8 negative, I believe.
- 9 Q. Did you receive drug testing for the father, that
- 10 he tested negative for all drugs?
- 11 A. Yes.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 13 A. Yes, I believe so.
- 14 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You reported on Page 24 -- you
- 15 stated in there, "After the child was interviewed, the
- 16 father repeatedly called the CPS worker to tell her
- 17 increasingly bizarre stories about the mother, in an
- 18 apparent attempt to influence the worker's disposition of
- 19 case."
- 20 Do you know what, quote, bizarre stories were
- 21 **told?**
- 22 A. Yes.
- 23 Q. And what are they?
- A. Well, it's listed above.
- 25 **Q.** Okay.

Page 177

- 1 A. And then also --
- Q. What are they?
- 3 A. That the mother and stepfather live in Oak Lawn,
- 4 which he called "gay town"; that Rob is bisexual; that the
- 5 mother was a swinger and she hung out with men and used
- 6 drugs and was an Ecstasy dealer; and that the worker --
- 7 that the work- -- that he needed a counselor to testify in
- 8 court in four days and that CPS needed to find him somebody
- 9 to do that, see the child and then be able to testify; and
- 10 that the worker -- he told the -- the CPS worker that the
- 11 mother's attorney was, like, a really bad person who went
- 12 big game hunting in Africa and shot wild animals and killed
- 13 them and that he's a good person and saves animals.
- 14 Q. Anything else?
- 15 A. That's all I can remember.
- 16 Q. Okay. Did you consider those all bizarre stories?
- 17 A. The African game hunting thing was a little
- 18 bizarre. And just the extremes was the nature that I was
- 19 referring to; not that they were, you know, not something
- 20 that could happen, but that -- the extremes the father
- 21 would go to to talk negatively about the mother in these
- 22 repeated phone calls to the worker. That was very unusual.
- 23 I don't know that I've ever seen that in CPS records.
- 24 Usually the parents call -- maybe call CPS to
- 25 follow up or to get information, maybe to give information,

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

817-447-6721

Page 178

- 1 but I'd never seen the amount of phone calls and the type
- 2 of information that the father provided to the worker.
- 3 Q. They did live in gay town -- I'm sorry, they did
- 4 not -- I don't mean to -- strike "gay town."
- 5 They did live in Oak Lawn?
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. You did verify that she took Xanax?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. And you did have CPS reports that her bong tested
- 10 positive for cocaine and marijuana?
- 11 A. Well, that was the allegation. That wasn't --
- 12 **Q.** Okay.
- 13 A. -- proven by anyone.
- 14 Q. But you didn't ask the mother whether or not that
- 15 **was --**
- 16 A. She said --
- 17 Q. -- she had done that?
- 18 A. She said she didn't use anything but Ecstasy.
- 19 Q. Okay. Was that a legal drug?
- 20 A. No.
- 21 Q. It was an illegal drug?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. That -- you just thought it was weird that her
- 24 attorney went African big game hunting, is that correct --
- 25 A. No.

Page 179

- 1 Q. -- and that --
- 2 A. I thought it was weird that the father would call
- 3 a caseworker to say that. What -- why? Why would somebody
- 4 do that? It's very unusual.
- 5 Q. What -- why should that impact your custody
- 6 evaluation if most of those things are true?
- 7 A. Because it shows the extent that the father is
- 8 willing to go to.
- 9 Q. By telling the truth about things?
- 10 A. I don't know that those things are the truth --
- 11 Q. You don't --
- 12 A. -- at all.
- 13 Q. You don't know they're lies, do you?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 15 A. No, I guess I don't.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So you don't know they're
- 17 lies, you don't know they're the truth, but, yet, you label
- 18 it as bizarre and innumerable stories and that was your
- 19 characterization; is that correct?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me show you Page 24. You
- 23 state in there, "In these ways, the father appears to be
- 24 teaching the child that because the father is special, the
- 25 child is also special and he deserves to be treated that

Page 180 1 way." 2 Α. Yes. Is that a negative, in your mind? If it affects his relationship with others, then Α. 5 yes. 6 Q. Could it be a positive? It could be. Α. 8 Q. Did you treat it as a negative? 9 I treated it as a negative in the way that 10 "special" means sometimes that you don't have to go by all the rules, which causes conflicts with peers, and in that 11 way it might be a problem for -- to teach that to a child. 12 13 Q. You didn't want to have a junior narcissist? MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 14 15 Α. Yes. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You were concerned that he 16 Q. 17 could be a junior narcissist --18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- is that correct? 20 Α. Yes. 21 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) If a boy has high self-esteem, 22 that's kind of a -- the -- at times, the mental makeup of 23 future business leaders, isn't it? 24 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form. 25 It could --Α.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 181

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) They believe that -- I'm
- 2 sorry, go ahead.
- A. It could be, but there's a way to feel good about
- 4 yourself without denigrating others. There's a difference.
- 5 Q. So you didn't just like the way his style was to
- 6 teach the child that he's special. Is that fair to say?
- 7 That didn't strike you as appropriate parenting, the way he
- 8 did it?
- 9 A. In that context, no, I didn't -- I didn't think
- 10 that was appropriate.
- 11 Q. Let me show you what's Page 24 where you state,
- 12 "The father appears to have an agenda not only to make
- 13 himself seem superior, but also to malign the mother; to
- 14 achieve this end, the father has a narrative that changes
- and appears to worsen with time."
- 16 Do you recall that?
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. You testified earlier that you believe the mother
- 19 has maligned the father, did you not?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. If I recall that she had called him, on Page 7, a
- 22 con man; is that correct?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. On Page 6, teaches his son to lie?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 182

- 1 Q. Page 2, calls him a narcissist, but not herself?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. Claims the father attempted to kill her by running
- 4 over her?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. Believes it?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. And she said all of those things, didn't she?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. Aren't those maligning the father?
- 11 A. Yes, but she was telling them to me in the context
- 12 of the custody evaluation.
- 13 Q. So you don't believe she's told any negative
- 14 things to other people?
- 15 A. Oh, she's -- I'm sure she has.
- 16 Q. Doesn't her articulating those things present
- 17 herself as being superior?
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. She doesn't present herself as being superior.
- 20 That's not her demeanor.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Well, if she says he's a con
- 22 man, he's a liar, teaches his son to do all this bad stuff,
- 23 but I don't, isn't that a claim of being superior?
- 24 A. Well, the --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 183

- 1 A. The absence of bad things doesn't mean you're
- 2 better. She admitted that she has faults and things that
- 3 she's working on for herself.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would it be fair to say that
- 5 you gave greater weight to his maligning than her
- 6 maligning?
- 7 A. I -- I gave it greater weight because there was
- 8 more of it and to more people and specifically, as I've
- 9 restated many times, to the child.
- 10 Q. Okay. Bear with me, Jennifer.
- 11 Let me turn your attention to Page 25. I'll
- 12 put it up on the screen for you so it's easier. "It's
- 13 clear that the father has set out and developed a carefully
- 14 curated image of himself as a superior father and the
- 15 mother as inferior; this image appears to be carefully
- 16 controlled and specifically communicated to Lauriston, as
- well as the father's friends and business associates; the
- 18 father seems to believe this image is the truth."
- 19 Do you recall that?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. What are your top three reasons to believe that
- 22 that statement is true?
- 23 A. The -- that's very difficult to water down into
- 24 three things.
- 25 Q. You can have more, if you want. Do top five.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 184

- 1 A. Okay. The way the father talks about himself and
- 2 talks about the mother. The mother never says the father
- 3 is optional, but the father seems to give that -- I mean,
- 4 that's an option for him, for the mother just not to be
- 5 involved. He doesn't say that, but when you look at his
- 6 behavior that's what he is attempting to do, I believe.
- 7 He is vindictive in the manner in which he
- 8 attempts to get this agenda accomplished, including giving
- 9 information to Lauriston to tell others to -- to maintain
- 10 the father's story through the child, which is very
- 11 damaging.
- 12 And the -- he doesn't have a lot of other
- 13 sources of emotional connection, so he -- it's kind of all
- 14 riding on the child in that the boundary between what the
- 15 child needs and what the father wants, there isn't -- to
- 16 him, those are the same thing, and that's very concerning
- 17 because that doesn't take into account the child's best
- 18 interest. The father thinks he's doing that, I believe,
- 19 but I don't think that he is.
- 20 Q. Anything else?
- 21 A. Not that I can think of.
- Q. So I'm trying to understand what you've said, so
- 23 I'm going to say back what I understood you to --
- A. Uh-huh.
- 25 Q. -- say, and please correct me if I'm wrong.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 185

- 1 I've got four reasons, and tell me if it's
- 2 more.
- The top three, four, five reasons that you
- 4 believe that the father has set out and developed a
- 5 carefully curated image of himself as a superior father and
- 6 the mother inferior is because -- the way he talks about
- 7 himself as if the mother is optional and he's not optional,
- 8 he's more of a necessity, for lack of a better term?
- 9 That's one.
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. Number two, he's vindictive, and his vindictive
- 12 expression is he uses his son to maintain his story of what
- 13 he believes to be the truth and passes that on to his son?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. And number three, the father has no other sources
- of emotional connection other than his son; therefore,
- there's few boundaries between him and his son; therefore,
- 18 he doesn't take into account his son's need for personal
- 19 growth. Is that fair --
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. -- or unfair to say?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. And those are your top four, I -- four, I would
- 24 say? Three? Four?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 186

- 1 Q. I'm sure there are others, but those are the top
- 2 ones?
- 3 A. Probably, yes.
- 4 Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 25. And
- 5 he describes in there -- or you write on Page 25, "In his
- 6 attachments the father stated that his bond of 'myself and
- 7 my son is unusual and close'"?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. Do you believe that was true?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. If it was close -- and you agree that the son
- 12 loves his father?
- 13 A. Of course.
- 14 Q. Your recommendation was to almost eliminate the
- 15 father/son visitation schedule, save and except for three
- 16 hours per week supervised --
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- is that correct?
- 19 A. That was my recommendation about access, yes.
- 20 Q. Okay. Did you base that recommendation on any
- 21 peer-reviewed articles or research recognized by any
- 22 psychological studies?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 24 A. I mean, I used all of my knowledge about those
- 25 things in determining, but I didn't base that

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 187

- 1 recommendation on any one specific study.
- 2 MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. Objection,
- 3 nonresponsive.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you base it on any
- 5 specific studies?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. No.
- 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is it just your clinical
- 9 opinion?
- 10 A. It's based on a number of studies in general that
- 11 I've read over the years, but nothing specific that I
- 12 can --
- 13 **Q.** Okay.
- 14 A. -- quote.
- 15 Q. Tell me the ones that you base it on that are not
- 16 specific.
- 17 A. I mean, all of the research I've read about shared
- 18 parenting schedules, we've had trainings -- we have a
- 19 training once a month about different custody evaluation
- 20 issues. We have guest speakers talk about things. I can't
- 21 think of any names right this second. I've read, you know,
- 22 Divorce Poison recently, re-read it again.
- 23 Q. By Stan- -- by Warshak?
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 Q. I've read Between Two Homes again recently because

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 188

- 1 we have new people in our office and it was sitting there,
- 2 so I re-read it again. Mom's House, Dad's House. You
- 3 know, several articles that I can't quote the author, but
- 4 I -- you know, we're reading all the time.
- 5 Each time I have an issue in my case that I'm
- 6 unfamiliar with as far as things that the parties are
- 7 involved in or a specific allegation, then I look up and
- 8 find research articles about that topic, so I'm doing that
- 9 constantly.
- 10 Q. Did you specifically research this set of fact
- 11 situations and match it up with any peer-reviewed
- 12 scientific articles by psychologists or psychological
- 13 studies?
- 14 A. No.
- 15 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 16 A. I thought of another thing to add to that list of
- 17 factors, is, according to other sources such as Rochelle
- 18 Ritzi, such as, you know, information I received from the
- 19 parties during the case, the mother appears to be much more
- 20 willing to take information about how she's behaving and
- 21 put it into place.
- The father, when he's given the same kind of
- 23 information about how maybe to change his behavior, it --
- it doesn't seem able to recognize that he is doing those
- 25 things. He just disagrees and then continues to do the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 189

- 1 same behavior.
- 2 So in that way, to put it in very basic
- 3 terms, the mother is teachable and the father isn't as
- 4 much, possibly because he doesn't recognize that the things
- 5 he is doing are damaging, which is a large concern of mine.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Let me call your
- 7 attention to Page 25. It says (as read), "The father's
- 8 personality traits is, by definition, long standing and
- 9 likely causes significant impairments in interpersonal
- 10 relationships through his lifetime, including romantic
- 11 relationships and those involved in parenting."
- 12 Do you see that?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. Is that your description, after identifying him
- 15 having narcissistic traits?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. And so I'm clear, you did not test the mother nor
- 18 the father for any personality profiles, did you?
- 19 A. No.
- 20 Q. And you didn't refer them to any psychologist or
- 21 others for evaluation for personality disorders or mental
- 22 health issues?
- 23 A. I'm capable of making determinations about
- 24 diagnoses, so I used my collective information about that.
- 25 Q. So you felt like you were in a superior position

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 190

- 1 to make your own determination of whether somebody was a
- 2 narcissist?
- 3 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 4 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 5 A. I didn't say that.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Just an equal position
- 7 or make your own opinion of whether or not they were
- 8 narcissistic?
- 9 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 10 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 11 A. I have the clinical knowledge and license in order
- 12 to be able to do that, yes.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did the mother allege that
- 14 it's mostly the father's fault that all of this is
- 15 happening?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 17 A. I -- I don't recall her saying that.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. When I say "that this
- is happening," that there's a custody fight and all the
- angst that's gone with the custody fight.
- 21 A. I mean, she may have that opinion. I don't know.
- 22 She didn't -- I don't remember her expressing that directly
- 23 to me.
- 24 Q. In your report that I read, I didn't see any place
- 25 in there where the mother valued the role of the father in

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 191

- 1 the son's life. Am I mistaken on that? Is there some
- 2 place in there that you believe it is expressed in there
- 3 that the mother values the father's role in his life?
- 4 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 5 A. I don't know that -- that that is ever asked
- 6 specifically. Occasionally I'll ask parties to tell me
- 7 something good about the other party, but I -- I don't
- 8 believe I did that in this case.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me turn your attention to
- 10 Page 26 where it states that, "The father appears to view
- 11 the child as 'perfect' only if he agrees with and behaves
- 12 as the father wishes; any deviation from the father's
- wishes for his behavior will likely be seen by the father
- 14 as traitorous."
- 15 Do you see where you wrote that?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. You're not able to know what's in the father's or
- 18 the child's mind, do you?
- 19 A. No.
- 20 Q. You don't know what the father's thinking?
- 21 A. Only what he tells me he's thinking.
- Q. Okay. Did he tell you that?
- 23 A. No.
- 24 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page -- still at 26.
- 25 I'll put that there where it says, "Even the father's

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 192

- 1 personal references mentioned that father has few outlets
- 2 for his own interests except the child."
- 3 See that?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. Is it possible that the father loves his child and
- 6 that's where he chooses to spend his time?
- 7 A. Sure, but most parents have -- especially because
- 8 the father works from home, he has so much free time that,
- 9 times when the child is with the mother, it would seem he
- 10 would have developed another interest. That's why I
- 11 mentioned it. It seems unusual in that -- especially in a
- 12 split schedule, he has only half the time with the child;
- 13 the other half of the time he doesn't -- you know, the
- 14 father's references mention that he doesn't have a lot of
- 15 interests. In fact, it was stated somewhere that he tells
- 16 the child things like, While you're gone, I miss you and
- 17 all I do is wait for you to come back, things like that
- 18 that are damaging.
- 19 Q. Okay. It could be kind of a positive, could it
- 20 not, if somebody is devoted to your well-being and
- 21 emotional well-being and physical well-being? Couldn't
- 22 that be a positive also?
- 23 A. I don't think it's good for anybody to have a
- 24 singular devotion to one person and only that. No, I don't
- 25 think that's healthy.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 193

- Is it your position that he has only a singular 1 Q.
- 2 devotion, and that's his son?
- Based on what I know, other than his work, yes, 3 Α.
- that's what I -- I -- how I view it. 4
- 5 So he's got his work and his son? 0.
- 6 Α. Pretty much.
- And you consider that unusual? Q.
- 8 Α. Somewhat, yes.
- 9 Do you know how much time he works? Q.
- 10 Α. Not specifically. He wasn't able to give me a
- timeline of how many hours of his day he spends doing 11
- various work activities. 12
- 13 Q. He's got more than one business, does he not?
- 14 Α. Yes.
- So he's got several businesses, and then he spends 15
- time with his son. Is that your understanding? 16
- 17 Α. Yes.
- Are you aware that the social study report on 18
- 19 Page 20 describes the mother as taking Xanax? I'm speaking
- to Jeff Siegel's --20
- 21 Α. Oh.
- 22 -- custody evaluation. Q.
- 23 Α. Yeah. She told me that she was prescribed that, I
- believe. 24
- 25 All right. Did you feel the father was Q.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 194

- 1 denigrating the mother when he described her as doing
- 2 drugs, cocaine, and had swinging parties?
- 3 A. Yes.
- Q. What if it was true?
- 5 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. To me, the fact -- whether it was true or not was
- 8 not the point. The fact is, is that this is something that
- 9 happened way before the child was born, something he likely
- 10 knew about the mother prior, but he's bringing it up in the
- 11 context of this setting in order to make the mother appear
- 12 negative in some way to me or to others.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Isn't that a negative, in your
- 14 mind?
- 15 A. That's why he's saying it.
- 16 Q. No. I'm asking, in your mind, is it a negative to
- 17 do drugs, cocaine, and have swingers' parties and then ask
- 18 for custody of a child.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 21 A. I don't -- I can't speak about people's sexual
- 22 practices at all. I'm not going to get into that. But, I
- 23 mean, drug use is -- is not appropriate when you're
- 24 parenting. But the father is not alleging that the mother
- 25 was doing it while parenting; he's alleging that she was

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 195

- 1 doing it as a single person.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) It was your understanding that
- 3 she wasn't doing drugs or illegal drugs while she was
- 4 parenting?
- 5 A. Correct. I don't believe that's what he was
- 6 alleging.
- 7 Q. How many --
- 8 A. He was alleging it was something prior to his
- 9 relationship with her.
- 10 Q. How many -- did you get any -- how many drug tests
- 11 did you have of the mother?
- 12 A. I have no -- I didn't do any, so I don't know.
- 13 Q. So you were depending on people's words?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. But you were concerned because of -- your concern
- was the father's denigrating the -- the mother because he's
- 17 alleging she did drugs, cocaine, and had swingers' parties,
- 18 and it really wasn't relevant in your mind, given the --
- 19 how old it was?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But you don't know how old it
- 23 was or wasn't, do you?
- 24 A. Well, the father said when she was with her first
- 25 husband, so that gives me a time frame that it was before

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 196

- 1 the relationship with the father. That's in the context of
- 2 when he mentioned those things occurring.
- Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 26. And
- 4 that doesn't really give you enough there. Can you find
- 5 **that --**
- 6 A. Uh-huh. "The father persists in his claims that
- 7 the mother 'permitted her brother to bathe naked with my
- 8 son,' even though this was clearly ruled out by CPS."
- 9 Q. Okay. So your understanding -- was it your
- 10 understanding when it was ruled out by CPS that it didn't
- 11 happen or it didn't rise to the level of the standards
- 12 required for a reason to believe?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 14 A. It didn't rise to the standards of even unable to
- 15 determine and clearly not reason to believe, but the
- 16 content was that -- I believe that it didn't even occur,
- 17 that the father is stuck on that claim.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You're not able to -- you're
- 19 not able to know whether it did occur or it did not occur.
- 20 Isn't that fair to say --
- 21 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- Jennifer?
- 23 A. I mean, I wasn't present.
- Q. Right. So you don't have any knowledge?
- 25 A. But neither does the father who --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 197 1 MR. ESSENBURG: Objection --2 Α. -- says --3 MR. ESSENBURG: -- nonresponsive. 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You don't have any personal knowledge? 5 6 Α. No. 7 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You'd be guessing? 9 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 10 Α. I wouldn't call it "guessing." (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What would you call it? 11 Q. 12 I would call it analyzing all of the data and Α. 13 coming to a conclusion. Is that kind of like getting run over by the car? 14 Q. MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 15 16 Α. I don't know what you mean. 17 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You surmised you couldn't Q. determine whether or not the father had pulled her out of 18 19 the car and tried to kill her or suicide or whether she ran 20 over herself because you -- you analyzed all of the data 21 and couldn't determine that; is that correct? 2.2 Α. Well, I think I know what happened, but it's not 23 up for me to determine that so I let that go. 24 0. So tell me again what you think happened. 25 With what? Α.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 198

- 1 Q. Getting run over by a car.
- 2 A. I think it was likely an accident. I don't think
- 3 it was purposeful behavior on anyone's part.
- 4 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 27. "The
- 5 father alleged the mother admitted in court to 'stealing
- 6 financial information from my company'."
- 7 Do you see that?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. Was that dispar- -- was that your belief that he
- 10 was disparaging the mother?
- 11 A. No. I think he really believes that that's
- 12 occurring.
- 13 Q. Okay. Do you believe that was true?
- 14 A. I -- I don't know. I said straight out I -- I
- 15 wasn't going to make any determination about the financial
- information because that's beyond my capabilities.
- 17 Q. Are you aware that they went to court and
- 18 addressed that issue in court?
- 19 A. I know there were hearings about it, yes. There
- 20 was a civil suit and some other stuff.
- 21 Q. Let me show you what's marked as Petitioner's
- 22 Exhibit 132 and ask to see if you recognize that document,
- 23 if you've seen that document before, which purports to be
- 24 an agreement of the civil suit in court about stealing
- 25 documents.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 199

- 1 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 2 A. I know I saw some documents. I don't recall if I
- 3 saw this Rule 11 Agreement, but I know that I saw something
- 4 regarding this case.
- 5 O. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You would agree with me that
- 6 at least this document states that "the Parties agree that
- 7 all documents in Defendant's possession" -- and the
- 8 Defendant being Nikki Ngo -- "containing Plaintiffs'
- 9 customer transaction information have been returned to
- 10 Plaintiffs," that being the father?
- 11 A. I don't know what it says. I don't --
- 12 Q. Okay. Well --
- 13 A. I don't pretend to interpret that legal stuff.
- 14 Q. Do you -- do you see that as being what is --
- 15 exactly what was said in that document that's been
- 16 identified as Petitioner's Exhibit 132?
- 17 A. That's what it says.
- 18 Q. Okay. You think she would have signed a document
- 19 like that unless she had some of his papers and his
- 20 valuable business information?
- 21 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 22 A. I don't know. I can't speak to her.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you believe the father --
- 24 I'm sorry, you said you didn't believe he was lying about
- 25 **that?**

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 200

- 1 A. No.
- Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 27.
- 3 "The father described the mother as having chronic pain,
- 4 arthritis, and she relies on her boyfriend to take care of
- 5 her, due to making 17,000 yearly income."
- 6 Was that your understanding of what her
- 7 income was that she made?
- 8 A. That's what the father described.
- 9 Q. Did you ask her, How much do you make?
- 10 A. She wasn't working currently, so her income was
- 11 zero at the time that I --
- 12 **Q.** Okay.
- 13 A. -- was doing my study.
- 14 Q. Did you believe the father was in some way
- 15 denigrating the mother when he made that statement?
- 16 A. In some way. He -- he -- as was a focus of
- 17 Dr. Siegel's report, he talks about the mother in a
- 18 negative way, that she has to rely on others, meaning, in
- 19 this case, the stepfather or her boyfriend at the time or
- 20 her family members when she was living with the father.
- 21 But in the same way, the father used nannies in order to
- 22 help him with the child. So, to me, continuously pointing
- 23 that out is -- the reason he's doing that is to try to make
- 24 her seem inferior, that she has a low income and that she
- 25 relies on people. That's -- that way, yes, he's -- that's

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 201

- 1 what he's trying to do with that statement.
- 2 Q. But isn't it true?
- 3 A. Whether it's true or not is beside the point.
- 4 It's the -- the reason the father is using it and telling
- 5 me about it, telling everybody about it.
- 6 Q. So I'm trying to understand, if the father tells
- you something that's true, but if it puts down the mother,
- 8 even if it's true, then you're observing him denigrate the
- 9 mother, not paying -- not giving much value to whether it's
- 10 true or not?
- 11 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Is that what I'm hearing?
- 13 MR. NESBITT: I'm sorry. Objection, form.
- 14 A. I mean, I did consider whether that was true or
- 15 not.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Does having not very much
- 17 money impact whether or not you can raise a child and have
- 18 a certain quality of life for a child?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 20 A. It -- it could, yes.
- 21 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So isn't that a relevant thing
- 22 to express to a custody evaluator, for example, saying,
- 23 Hey, I can provide a little higher quality of life for a
- 24 child than the mother can?
- 25 A. It could, yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 202

- 1 Q. And so if he expresses that to you, even though
- 2 it's denigrating and -- in fact, it could be factual and a
- 3 relevant factor for the custody evaluator to actually pay
- 4 attention to?
- 5 A. It could be, yes.
- 6 Q. In your opinion, can you raise a child on 17,000 a
- 7 year and live in Highland Park?
- 8 A. Not live in --
- 9 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 10 A. Not live in Highland Park, but you can certainly
- 11 do that. Lots of people do, I guess.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And let me turn your attention
- 13 to Page 27. You said, "He's condescending and derogatory
- about the mother's 'reliance on' her family, even in the
- 15 time period when she was recovering from the accident and
- 16 major surgery."
- 17 We just agreed that somehow finances or the
- 18 ability to provide for yourself is relevant in a custody
- 19 evaluation; do you agree?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. So if she's dependent on her family and that
- 22 family support goes south or if she's dependent on her
- 23 boyfriend and the boyfriend or husband's relationship goes
- 24 south, isn't that child vulnerable to have dramatic changes
- 25 in his life?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 203

- 1 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 2 A. He could be, yes.
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And isn't that relevant in a
- 4 custody evaluation?
- 5 A. It is, yes.
- 6 Q. So why is your focus about the condescending and
- 7 derogatory attitude --
- 8 A. Because --
- 9 Q. -- if it's relevant?
- 10 A. It's relevant, but that doesn't account for child
- 11 support to help even out those things and to account for,
- 12 you know, meeting the child's needs.
- 13 Q. So if the facts are you've got zero income and
- \$1,200 a month, do you think that's changed the equation?
- 15 A. I don't understand what you're asking.
- 16 Q. If the facts are that the father's paying \$1,200 a
- 17 month child support and she's got, as you say, zero income,
- does that change the circumstances where the child is
- vulnerable because the mother is dependent on her boyfriend
- 20 or husband or family?
- 21 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 22 A. I mean, it may, but there's no -- there was no
- 23 indication to me that those things were in jeopardy or at
- 24 risk, which the father -- I think the father is just --
- 25 he's not talking about it for -- thinking that it's at

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 204

- 1 risk; he's talking about it because he thinks the mother
- 2 should live independently.
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 4 A. That's his cultural norm, is for people to live
- 5 independently and live on their own income.
- 6 Q. Did he say that to you, and did you quote that in
- 7 that report, what you just said?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. No.
- MR. NESBITT: Sorry.
- 11 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So he didn't say it and you
- 12 didn't put it down; that was just your feeling?
- 13 A. The father had mentioned several times, Why can't
- 14 she just live on her own. He did say that.
- 15 MR. ESSENBURG: Objection, nonresponsive.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Was it just your feeling that
- 17 was his attitude?
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. No. He said it.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) He said it to you?
- 21 A. He said that he thought she should live on her own
- 22 and that was what was right, yes.
- Q. Did he say it to you?
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 Q. When did he do it?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 205

- 1 A. When we were talking about concerns, I believe.
- 2 Q. Okay. You are aware, were you not, that when the
- 3 mother got run over by her car she went to the hospital?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. She sustained serious medical injuries?
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. And she was in the hospital a long time?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. And you were aware, while that was going on, the
- 10 father was taking care of this boy?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. And you're also aware that the father works from
- 13 **home?**
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. And so that when the father is -- was always there
- 16 present with his child early on every time he had the
- 17 child, he's at home with the child?
- 18 A. That's my understanding, yes.
- 19 Q. And that he had a disproportionate amount of time
- 20 with the child when the mother was injured?
- 21 A. Sure.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And after the custody
- 24 evaluation, the father had equal possession, pursuant to an
- 25 Agreed Order?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 206

- 1 A. Yes, that's my understanding.
- 2 Q. So most of the child's life, the father has been
- 3 present in the child's life either at home during his
- 4 possession and equal possession after the Order was signed?
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did that carry any weight with
- 8 you in terms of determining whether or not the father and
- 9 son have an unusual bond?
- 10 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 11 A. I mean, I would expect a child to be bonded with
- 12 both parents, especially if they have equal access time.
- 13 MR. ESSENBURG: Objection, nonresponsive.
- 14 A. I'm not sure what you're asking.
- 15 O. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) I didn't ask about the mother;
- 16 I asked about the father.
- 17 Did that carry weight with you, the fact that
- 18 the father stayed at home -- works from home, spent a lot
- 19 of extra time at home when the mother was injured with the
- 20 child, and the fact that after the -- that they had equal
- 21 possession after their legal disagreements were worked out?
- 22 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- A. No, I guess it didn't surprise me.
- 24 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did that carry weight for you
- 25 in your custody evaluation?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 207

- 1 A. Yes.
- 2 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 27, and I'll
- 3 put it up on the screen there so you can read it easier.
- 4 "The father has the ability to provoke others into reacting
- 5 emotionally which will make them look unstable; he appears
- 6 to have intentionally utilized this tactic several times in
- 7 public places with the mother and stepfather, usually with
- 8 the child present."
- 9 You wrote that on Page 27?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. And what forms the basis of your opinion that the
- 12 father has the ability to provoke others?
- 13 A. The incident that comes to mind specifically is
- 14 the incident at the hockey rink about the child's name, how
- 15 it was written on his helmet.
- 16 Q. What happened?
- 17 A. So the -- it was the -- as I understand, it was
- 18 the mother's parenting time. Father -- mother and
- 19 stepfather were present. Father was also present, and he
- 20 walked over -- the father walked over to the child and
- 21 his -- they had tape on the -- on their helmets -- hockey
- 22 helmets, and it said "Logan." And the father -- I don't
- 23 know the specifics, whether the father took it off or
- 24 that -- he says that the coach asked him to put a sticker
- 25 on. I'm not sure, but in some instance there was a -- a

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 208

- 1 debate about which name should be placed on there.
- 2 The stepfather came down to have a discussion
- 3 with the father about what he thought should happen, and he
- 4 states that the father made a degrading comment about the
- 5 mother, that, You're just mad because you married the town
- 6 bicycle.
- 7 The father -- the -- the coach then saw that
- 8 the two parties were angry and said, I'm -- I'm out; I
- 9 don't want to take a part in this, and so none of the other
- 10 adults were agreeing to participate in the incident.
- 11 What ended up happening was -- of course, all
- 12 of this was in front of the child -- was that the mother
- 13 and stepfather were going to leave and take the child with
- 14 them, and then I believe the father said he would leave as
- 15 long as the child could stay and play.
- But the father, of course, denied that he
- 17 said anything. Everyone agrees that the -- the
- 18 stepfather's comment to him was, He called my wife a whore,
- 19 but the father denies that he said anything to elicit that.
- Q. Why didn't the stepfather stay in his seat?
- 21 A. I don't know, which is why I listed my concern
- 22 about him becoming involved with --
- Q. So as I understand this hockey incident -- and, by
- 24 the way, what year did that occur?
- 25 A. That was this year.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 209

- 1 Q. 2019?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. Any month in particular?
- 4 A. I think it was this season, so it would have been
- 5 in the early part of the year. Playoffs were in March
- 6 maybe. January to March --
- 7 Q. Spring of -- spring of 2019?
- 8 A. I believe so.
- 9 Q. Okay. So the father didn't go up to where the
- 10 mother and stepfather were seated; it was the stepfather
- 11 that came down to speak to the father; is that correct?
- 12 A. Yes.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 14 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Why isn't the stepfather's
- 15 action the one that's provoking it?
- 16 A. I believe they --
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 18 A. -- were both provoking it.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But you list, "The father has
- 20 the ability" -- not the stepfather; it says, "The father
- 21 has the ability to provoke others" -- you didn't mention
- 22 the stepfather.
- 23 A. Because I believe the comment that was made and
- 24 the going over to do -- do anything with the helmet was the
- 25 father's --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 210

- 1 Q. But if the father (sic) is the one that came out
- of the stands and went down to confront the father, isn't
- 3 that a provocation?
- 4 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 5 A. I mean, what started it was the father interacting
- 6 with the child about his name.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So let me get this straight.
- 8 The provocation is the father wanted his son to have his
- 9 real legal name, his name? Is that the provocation?
- 10 A. Yes. And then saying --
- 11 Q. And what's not -- excuse me.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 13 MR. NESBITT: Objection. Please let the
- 14 witness finish her answer --
- MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah.
- 16 A. And then --
- 17 MR. NESBITT: -- before you start another
- 18 question, Counselor.
- MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. But let me object as
- 20 nonresponsive.
- MR. NESBITT: Okay.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What's not --
- 23 MR. NESBITT: You can assert an objection,
- 24 but you need to let her finish her --
- MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. I will.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

866-4MASSEY 817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 211

- 1 MR. NESBITT: -- answer.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What's non- -- I'm sorry, what
- 3 is nonprovoking is the stepfather coming down out of the
- 4 stands to confront the father?
- 5 A. That is also provoking.
- 6 Q. So why didn't you list there that the stepfather
- 7 has the ability to provoke others?
- 8 A. I didn't list it there because those are concerns
- 9 about the father. I did list as a concern about the
- 10 stepfather that he is engaging in that in front of the
- 11 child. That is a concern of mine, and I did --
- 12 **Q.** Isn't the --
- 13 A. -- list it.
- 14 Q. -- stepfather stepping out of the stands, coming
- down provoking the father in the presence of the child?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. So why wasn't that mentioned in your custody
- 18 evaluation?
- 19 A. It was.
- 20 Q. I didn't see anywhere where you said the
- 21 stepfather provoked the father by coming out of the stands
- 22 at the hockey game.
- 23 A. Okay. Well, I --
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 25 A. I didn't list that specific thing. But under

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 212

- 1 the --
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 3 A. -- concerns about the mother, I listed that the
- 4 stepfather is allowing his anger to cross the line and get
- 5 in- --
- 6 Q. Okay.
- 7 A. -- -to that altercation in front of the child,
- 8 which is a bad thing.
- 9 Q. Would you agree with me that the stepfather
- 10 provoked -- was equally responsible for coming down out of
- 11 the stands and confronting the father at the hockey game,
- 12 provoking him?
- 13 A. I think it was reactionary, is what I would
- 14 describe that more as.
- 15 Q. You wouldn't characterize that as provoking a
- 16 fight?
- 17 A. I think the father does those things in order to
- 18 provoke the response that he ends up getting.
- 19 MR. ESSENBURG: Objection, nonresponsive.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You wouldn't characterize him
- 21 coming out of the stands as provoking a fight?
- 22 A. He was provoking a confrontation, yes.
- 23 **Q.** Okay.
- A. And it was in September of 2018. I just found
- 25 the --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 213

- 1 Q. Okay. September --
- 2 A. It's the -- the hockey schedule was the 2018/2019
- 3 season.
- 4 Q. Fair enough.
- 5 A. So it was --
- 6 Q. Now, as I understand your facts as you understand
- 7 them, it was the father that left the ice skating rink so
- 8 his son wouldn't have to miss the hockey game or have a
- 9 problem?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 11 A. I don't remember what ended up happening. That's
- 12 what the father offered to do --
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But --
- 14 A. -- but I think that actually the -- the child and
- 15 mom and stepfather actually left.
- That's what it says here.
- 17 Q. So I'm confused because I thought I heard you say
- 18 that it was the father that left. So I'm trying to
- 19 understand. Who left?
- 20 A. I think the father offered to leave, but I think
- 21 the stepfather and mother went ahead and just left and took
- 22 the child --
- 23 **Q.** Okay.
- 24 A. -- to end the --
- 25 **Q.** Did --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 214

- 1 A. -- issue.
- 2 Q. -- the step- -- did the mother ever say or did you
- ever hear the mother say, Hey, Stepfather, don't go down
- 4 there and confront him; let him -- let the father put his
- 5 son's nametag as Lauriston?
- 6 A. No.
- 7 Q. Do you believe that contributes somewhat to the
- 8 confrontation?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. Let me turn your attention to 27. It says,
- 11 "Lauriston" -- on Page 27 it says (as read),
- "'Lauriston...forced to go to his mother's even though it's
- 13 clear that abuse is happening...; another personal
- 14 reference for the father used similar language about how
- the mother 'needed two nannies, a maid and a cook' although
- 16 the information appears to be false."
- 17 So I'm trying to understand that. What
- 18 information is false?
- 19 A. Oh, that -- the -- that phrase, the "two nannies,
- 20 a maid, and a cook" was repeated multiple times.
- 21 Q. By whom?
- 22 A. By the father and the father's references.
- 23 **Q.** Okay.
- A. But I was never able to verify that that actually
- 25 occurred. The -- there -- the parents did employ a

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 215

- 1 nanny, and then they employed a different nanny, but it was
- 2 not at the same time, is my understanding; and that they
- 3 did have a maid, not somebody who lived there, but somebody
- 4 who came to clean once a week, or something like that.
- 5 Q. So you did an investigation of those facts?
- 6 A. I asked the parties what -- you know, what they
- 7 were talking about, and that's what -- that's the --
- 8 what -- the information that I understood.
- 9 Q. So you just kind of asked them?
- 10 A. I asked them, yes.
- 11 Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 27 here,
- 12 and it says, "The mother took the child away (by lying to
- 13 the father)" --
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. Do you see that?
- 16 So the mother admitted to you that she lied
- 17 to the father?
- 18 A. I don't know that she used that word, but she
- 19 described the situation, and she --
- Q. Well, why did you write, "by lying to the father"?
- 21 A. Because that's what I'm determining it to be.
- Q. Okay. So that was kind of your understanding?
- 23 A. My summation of that --
- 24 **Q.** Okay.
- 25 A. -- incident, yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 216

- 1 Q. Did that cause you any concerns, that the mother
- 2 would lie to the father?
- 3 A. That whole incident caused me concerns for both
- 4 parties.
- 5 Q. Would you agree with me, that in your opinion at
- 6 least, sometimes the mother lies to the father?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. Do you have concerns that she would lie to you?
- 9 A. Possibly. Sure.
- The father also lied by telling the ship's
- 11 captain that she didn't have legal guardianship, which was
- 12 an attempt to, again, cause -- disrupt the --
- Q. Did you get that from him or from her?
- 14 A. From the notes of the ship's doctor.
- 15 Q. Ship's doctor? You got the ship's doctor's notes?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. Who would -- how would the father have talked to
- 18 the ship's doctor?
- 19 A. He told me he called him.
- 20 **Q.** Okay.
- 21 A. He called him directly because he was trying to
- 22 get the mother -- he was trying to get -- initially get the
- 23 mother to not be able to board. But then once he realized
- 24 she was already on the ship, so then he called to ask to
- 25 speak with the ship's doctor, saying that the mother was --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 217

- 1 did not have legal guardianship of the child and she should
- 2 not be having him on the vacation, and then saying the
- 3 child was too sick to go and he had gone to the doctor and
- 4 he had a spastic colon.
- 5 **Q.** Do you know --
- 6 A. So then that --
- Q. -- whether or not there was a doctor's report
- 8 diagnosing the son with a spastic colon?
- 9 A. I got the doctor's information and it said the
- 10 father reports that, but that the exam is always within
- 11 normal limits.
- 12 Q. Did the -- any doctor's report ever characterize
- 13 the son as -- a diagnosis by the doctor as him having a
- 14 spastic colon?
- 15 A. No.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. So this was all by the
- 18 father to the doctor? Is that your opinion?
- 19 A. I --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 21 A. I need to clarify.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.
- 23 A. The --
- Q. Go ahead.
- 25 A. The doctor's notes indicate that multiple times

Page 218

- 1 the father came in reporting to the doctor that the child
- 2 had stomach issues, and he also reported that to the ship's
- 3 doctor, but in the documentation, there was never testing
- 4 or verification by the doctor that that was occurring.
- 5 Q. So in your opinion, at least your understanding
- 6 was there was never any diagnosis of this boy having a
- 7 spastic colon?
- 8 A. Correct.
- 9 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 28.
- 10 THE REPORTER: When you get to a spot, could
- 11 we take a quick break?
- MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah, we can take one now.
- 13 (Recess taken from 3:52 p.m. to 4:03 p.m.)
- 14 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) We're back on the record.
- 15 Jennifer, you understand we're back on the record?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. Let me show you what's marked -- I'm sorry,
- 18 Page 28. It states that -- on 28 (as read), "The father
- 19 stated the child has had four counselors over the past few
- 20 years; Dr. Le, Bergthold, Sauer, and Chandler for
- 21 'anxiety;' that he has made outcries"?
- 22 A. Yes.
- 23 Q. "He stated the child 'made an outcry about the
- 24 mother biting him'."
- Do you -- are you aware that Dr. Chandler was

Page 219

- 1 recommended by the Jesuit -- by the Jesuit priest to go to
- 2 counseling after the issue of the priest in training being
- 3 naked in the bathtub with him?
- 4 A. I only learned that from the other document that
- 5 you provided today.
- 6 Q. Yeah.
- 7 A. So I didn't know that.
- 8 Q. Would you --
- 9 A. I knew that he was a counselor the child was
- 10 seeing for that allegation, but I didn't realize that the
- 11 Jesuits were involved in the payment.
- 12 Q. Well, do you have any concerns or any problems
- 13 with the father taking the child to the Jesuit priest
- 14 counselor?
- 15 A. No.
- 16 Q. And then -- let's see here. The -- let me show
- 17 you Page 28, and it states in there that, "Another example
- 18 occurred when the father attempted to influence the CPS
- 19 worker by telling her he needed a therapist that would
- 20 'testify before the Judge in four days'."
- 21 You wrote that?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. Did that cause you -- did you believe that he was
- 24 trying to manufacture some evidence to -- for court?
- 25 A. No.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 220

- 1 Q. Did you believe he was trying to be able to have
- 2 somebody tell the child's story in court, whatever it was?
- 3 A. I -- I don't know what his intention was there.
- 4 Q. Why did you write that as an example of him
- 5 overusing counselors?
- 6 A. I -- I don't --
- 7 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 8 A. I don't think that's what I intended.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Did you attribute any
- 10 negativity to the father talking to a CPS worker to come
- 11 testify if there was a hearing within four days of the time
- 12 of him talking to the CPS worker?
- 13 A. The reason why I wrote it was because it was that
- 14 the father was trying to kind of intimidate her, say that
- 15 whatever she was saying, that she was going to have to
- 16 appear in court to talk about it, that he was kind of
- 17 utilizing that person for court.
- 18 Q. And who is the CPS worker that you're referring
- 19 to?
- 20 A. The one that was involved in the June and July
- 21 2017 case, which was --
- 22 O. Is that Bazile?
- 23 A. I believe so, yes.
- 24 Q. Ms. --
- 25 A. Williams-Baz- -- -Brazil --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 221

- 1 Q. Yes.
- 2 A. -- -Bazile.
- Q. Are you aware of the one -- that she's the one
- 4 that recommended he go to court?
- 5 A. No, I didn't know that.
- 6 Q. Did you ever talk to her?
- 7 A. No.
- 8 Q. So it's possible you got that flipped and totally
- 9 wrong, isn't it?
- 10 A. Maybe, yes.
- 11 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 29 where you
- 12 state, "The mother's fear of the father is based on the
- 13 father's history of vindictive behaviors towards her, such
- 14 as repeated allegations of sexual abuse to the child by the
- 15 mother's boyfriend/now husband and her two brothers."
- 16 Do you see that?
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. Are you aware that the father has never alleged
- 19 sexual abuse, ever? He's alleged that the uncle got in
- 20 naked with -- in the bathtub, which is not sexual abuse;
- and that the boyfriend slept in the bed naked with the
- 22 mother, which is not sexual abuse. Are you aware of that?
- 23 A. I -- maybe I should have said "sexual incidence."
- Q. Okay. You used the word "sexual abuse."
- 25 A. Because that's what CPS -- that's one of their

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 222 determining word, is --1 2 0. Yeah. -- "neglectful supervision" --4 But you would agree with me that CPS can conduct Q. 5 its own different investigation, independent of the 6 father's recitation of what facts occurred? Α. Yes. So you're not attributing you -- even if CPS 8 Q. 9 investigated sexual abuse, that doesn't mean the father 10 alleged sexual abuse? No. It -- I --11 Α. 12 Do you agree with that or disagree --0. 13 Α. Yes. -- with that? 14 Q. 15 Α. I agree. And if the father said, Hey, CPS, naked uncle got 16 Q. 17 in bed -- bed -- excuse me, in a bathtub with my son and washed him, that would be a reasonable concern, if it's a 18 19 priest in training -- catholic priest in training, would it 20 not? 21 Α. It would be a reason- --22 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form. 23 Α. It would be a reasonable concern at any point. I should have used the word "sexual 24 25 allegation, " "sexual inappropriate behavior. " I should

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 223

- 1 have used another word, but that's what I intended.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Did you believe at the
- 3 time you wrote it that the fact that he was -- that the
- 4 father was alleging sexual abuse?
- 5 A. No. I intended for the meaning I stated.
- 6 Q. Okay. So to be clear in the position to the Court
- 7 today, your position is not that the father alleged sexual
- 8 abuse, that the father alleged inappropriate behavior of
- 9 the uncle getting naked into a bathtub with a
- 10 seven-year-old boy as a priest in training; is that
- 11 correct? That's one of the incidences?
- 12 A. I would just call that "sexually inappropriate
- 13 behavior."
- 14 Q. Okay.
- 15 A. I would say -- I would term that broadly about the
- 16 allegations were concerning the mother's boyfriend/now
- 17 husband and her two brothers.
- 18 Q. And were you aware that the other alleged incident
- 19 that went to CPS is that the boyfriend got in the bed naked
- 20 with Ms. Ngo and the child was sleeping in the bed?
- 21 A. So I was told that there was another allegation
- 22 regarding Rob Cottingham, but when I requested records I
- 23 didn't receive any narrative of that. So that's why I
- 24 didn't list it, because I couldn't substantiate it.
- 25 Q. So if you didn't know there was more than one, you

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 224

- 1 still articulated that there were repeated allegations of
- 2 sexual abuse by the boyfriend and husband and her two
- 3 brothers.
- 4 A. Because both parties told me that there were more
- 5 than one case in which sexually inappropriate behavior was
- 6 the subject. That's what I intended.
- Q. Okay. So you're clear, in fact, now that there
- 8 wasn't sexual abuse alleged, that was -- the allegations
- 9 were getting in bed naked with a child in -- the child
- 10 being in the bed with the mother; and, secondly,
- 11 uncle/priest in training getting into a bathtub naked
- 12 with a young boy?
- 13 A. Those are the allegations, correct.
- 14 Q. Were there any others other than that?
- 15 A. Not that I know of, other than the biting and the
- 16 holding upside down.
- 17 Q. I'm talking about sexual abuse --
- 18 A. No.
- 19 **Q.** -- only.
- 20 A. None of -- none of the other ones I knew of.
- 21 Q. So when you refer to "repeated sexual abuse,"
- 22 those are the two incidences that you were referring to,
- 23 the bathtub and the getting in bed naked?
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 Q. No others?

Page 225

- 1 A. Not that I know of, no.
- Q. Okay. Did you believe that, when the father's
- 3 describing these inappropriate sexual behaviors or just
- 4 "inappropriate behaviors," for lack of a better term, that
- 5 that's vindictive?
- 6 A. If they're not true.
- Q. Do you know that they're not true?
- 8 A. I suspect that they're not.
- 9 Q. Okay. But you said you'd characterize them as
- 10 vindictive behaviors towards the mother.
- 11 A. Right.
- 12 Q. Why did you do that?
- 13 A. Because I don't believe that they're true.
- 14 Q. That -- that the boyfriend didn't get in naked and
- 15 that the uncle didn't get in the bathtub naked with the
- 16 young boy? You don't believe they're true?
- 17 A. Correct.
- 18 Q. Did you ever ask the boy?
- 19 A. I asked him about abuse, yes.
- 20 Q. What did he say?
- 21 A. He said --
- 22 **Q.** Did he --
- 23 A. He --
- Q. Did he say his uncle got in the bathtub --
- 25 MR. NESBITT: Objection --

Page 226

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- with him --
- 2 MR. NESBITT: -- form.
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- naked?
- 4 A. He denied sexual abuse specifically and emotional
- 5 abuse.
- 6 Q. Let's agree that we -- nobody has ever alleged
- 7 sexual abuse, that he --
- 8 A. Okay.
- 9 Q. -- the statement of fact was, Uncle got in bed --
- in the bathtub naked with me.
- 11 And that was the allegation, not abuse.
- 12 A. Okay. What he said about that was --
- 13 Q. Do you need some time to chase it down, Jennifer?
- 14 A. I'm almost there. He -- he never talked about
- 15 those incidents. He talked about -- to me directly,
- 16 although he was interviewed by CPS and he talked about them
- 17 at that time.
- 18 Q. Did you ask him directly yourself?
- 19 A. Yes.
- Q. What did he say?
- 21 A. I -- when I talk -- I use the term "sexual abuse,"
- 22 but when I describe that to a child it's -- it's not the
- 23 CPS definition. It's a broad definition of any
- 24 sexually-inappropriate --
- 25 Q. What did you --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 227

- 1 A. -- behavior.
- 2 Q. Sorry.
- What did you ask him; what did he say?
- 4 A. I ask all children, Has anyone ever --
- 5 MR. ESSENBURG: Let me object. Objection,
- 6 nonresponsive.
- 7 A. Okay.
- 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) I'm not asking you what you
- 9 ask all children.
- 10 A. I don't --
- 11 Q. I'm asking you specifically, what did you ask
- 12 Lauriston Crockett, IV; what did he, Lauriston Crockett,
- 13 **IV, say.**
- 14 A. Okay. I asked him, Has anyone -- at first I
- 15 substantiate that he understands what private parts are,
- 16 and he did understand that. So I asked him if anyone had
- 17 ever touched his private parts, and he said, No.
- I asked him if he has ever touched anyone
- 19 else's private parts, and he said, No.
- 20 I asked him has anyone ever made him feel
- 21 uncomfortable when he was naked. What I'm trying to get at
- 22 is privacy issues. So is he allowed private time when he
- 23 is in the bathroom, when he is changing clothes, and he
- 24 said, Yes, to those things, that he's allowed private time
- 25 in those occasions.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 228

- 1 Q. Okay. Anything else?
- 2 A. If he's afraid of anyone or has anyone ever hurt
- 3 his body in any way.
- 4 Q. Okay. Let me show you what's marked as
- 5 Petitioner's Exhibit Number 126, and in particular the
- 6 document entitled Forensic Interview Notes of Dr. (sic)
- 7 Blayne Burgess, Badge Number 9721, Dallas Police
- 8 Department, Child Abuse Unit.
- 9 And in there -- tell me if I'm reading this
- 10 right. This is the -- does Dad tell him not to lie, at
- 11 least according to that report?
- 12 A. That's what --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection --
- 14 A. -- it says.
- MR. NESBITT: -- form.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. And does it say that,
- 17 Uncle went in the bathtub with me naked?
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. I'm sorry, let me -- does it say, "He even did my
- 20 private parts"?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. And this is the police
- 24 detective interviewing the boy, Lauriston Crockett, IV; is
- 25 that correct?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 229

- 1 A. It is -- the interviewer is Janeth Peterson. I'm
- 2 assuming she is a forensic interviewer.
- 3 Q. Okay.
- 4 A. And the detective was present, it looks like.
- Q. Do you have any reason to doubt their notes?
- 6 MR. WHIDDON: I'm going to object to form.
- 7 A. No.
- 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) All right. Okay. It says,
- 9 "He got in the tub first; he was naked."
- 10 Do you see that?
- 11 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did the forensic interview say
- 13 **that?**
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. Do you have any reason to doubt that forensic
- 16 interview?
- 17 A. No.
- 18 Q. Did you ever get a copy of this forensic interview
- 19 notes of -- dated July 26th, 2017?
- 20 A. We've already substantiated that I did not.
- 21 Q. Okay. Do you feel like you should have?
- 22 A. Yes.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you feel that that would

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 230

- 1 have impacted your custody evaluation?
- 2 A. It could have, yes.
- 3 Q. Does it --
- 4 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 5 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- right now as we speak?
- 6 A. Possibly, yes.
- 7 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 29. And it
- 8 states in your report, "It is extremely concerning and
- 9 likely another veiled threat for intimidation, that the
- 10 father has a permit to carry a concealed weapon, that he
- 11 reportedly carries it loaded at all times and he makes sure
- 12 people know about it."
- 13 Did you write that?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 O. So we've established he has no criminal record, he
- worked for the DEA, he doesn't have any mental health
- 17 evaluations that are concerning about violence, he has a
- 18 license to carry a gun, he's not doing anything illegal,
- 19 not assaulted anybody.
- 20 What forms the basis of your writing, "It is
- 21 extremely concerning and likely another veiled threat for
- 22 intimidation, the father has a permit to carry a concealed
- 23 **weapon" --**
- A. Because of how focused he is and how angry he is
- 25 at the mother and his willingness to -- to win this case.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 231

- 1 Q. So it's his focus?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. And you believe he could potentially do it at all
- 4 cost?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. Okay. But you don't have any basis in terms of
- 7 criminal history, in terms of his legal -- complying with
- 8 legal requirements of the law regarding criminal laws, or
- 9 any mental health evaluations that would raise concerns
- 10 about what you are concerned about?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 12 A. Correct.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Just your gut reaction or
- 14 your -- your hunch?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 16 A. It's based on all of the material put together
- 17 about the father's behaviors.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) But it's your hunch?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 20 A. It's my clinical opinion.
- 21 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. And you did not do or
- request a psychological evaluation; is that correct?
- 23 A. Correct.
- Q. You didn't feel there was a basis or a need for
- 25 doing that?

Page 232

- 1 Α. No.
- 2 So how do you reconcile that? 0.
- A psychological evaluation, to me, is for the 3 Α.
- 4 purposes of determining if and what are they, any major
- mental illness or personality disorders a person has. 5
- 6 0. Assume for a moment it could discover that he's
- 7 paranoid, right?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Could it not? Q.
- 10 Α. It could.
- And if it doesn't, if he's not paranoid, then 11 Q.
- maybe your hunches might not be right --12
- 13 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- is that correct? 14 Q.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 15
- I think those two are unrelated. 16 Α.
- 17 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. You stated on Page 29 Q.
- (as read), "This presents a risk to the mother, stepfather, 18
- 19 and child, as well as anyone with whom the father has a
- 20 significant conflict, especially who have given negative
- information to the Court in this case." 21
- 2.2 What forms the basis of your statement there?
- 23 Α. Again, all of the professionals that talked about
- 24 the father's, you know, vindictiveness, his anger, his
- 25 focus on the mother and her negatives, his -- the fact that

Amy Massey & Associates

Page 233

- 1 his world is this child, that he really needs to win.
- 2 The -- all of the dedication he has toward this one goal --
- 3 Q. Is --
- 4 A. -- is overwhelming and frightening.
- 5 Q. Overwhelming and frightening to whom?
- 6 A. To anyone who gets in the father's way.
- 7 Q. Okay. Did you ask -- who are -- who are you
- 8 referring to? Anybody? The whole population of Dallas if
- 9 they're getting in -- is that your perspective?
- 10 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 11 A. No. I said specifically who was maybe at risk.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Is it unusual for a
- 13 parent in a custody evaluation to want to, quote, win
- 14 custody, unquote?
- 15 A. No.
- 16 Q. So it's kind of what you see almost every time you
- 17 see a custody evaluation?
- 18 A. That that is their wish, yes.
- 19 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 29 here, and
- 20 let me put that up there so it's easier for you to read.
- 21 "He seems to twist facts in order to present them in way
- 22 that favors him and seems logical and makes the mother
- 23 appear negligent and inappropriate in some way."
- 24 See that?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 234

- 1 Q. What facts did he twist?
- 2 A. That -- the allegations about the sexual -- the
- 3 inappropriate behavior, the --
- 4 THE WITNESS: I'm getting tired.
- 5 MR. ESSENBURG: Take your time.
- 6 A. The interactions he has with CPS, with the
- 7 counselors. He -- he goes into meetings with a person who
- 8 he sees as possibly beneficial to his cause, which is
- 9 convincing them that he needs to be primary of this child,
- 10 and he goes into this professional with an agenda, with
- 11 some facts that may not be completely true, maybe they're
- 12 based on some fact, and he exaggerates them to the point
- 13 that it makes the mother appear -- that it's just such a
- 14 clear choice, that the mother is clearly wrong for this
- 15 child.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay
- 17 A. And it's -- it's in everything that he does and
- 18 the people he talks to, and they talked about it. I mean,
- 19 the counselors talked about how the father's -- you know,
- 20 that he came in saying, I need you to speak for me in court
- 21 for the child, and this is what I want. And that they
- 22 described him as putting the child in the middle, very
- 23 pushy, he's alienating the school professionals with his
- 24 demandingness, that he's believing that the child should be
- 25 called this name and that I need to tell the Court that for

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 235

- 1 him, that he pressures the child, that --
- Q. Let me -- let me pause you for just a second.
- 3
 I'm not asking opinions about stuff; I'm
- 4 asking for facts. And so my question to you was, what
- 5 facts did he twist? What I've heard from you is one set of
- 6 facts, which is the sexual abuse allegations and/or CPS
- 7 allegations, whatever genre that is.
- 8 A. Right.
- 9 Q. And I've heard no other facts. What other facts
- 10 has he twisted.
- 11 MR. NESBITT: Objection, sidebar; objection
- 12 to the form of the question.
- 13 I'm going to instruct the witness that you
- 14 answer the question the way you feel necessary and don't
- 15 listen to Mr. Essenburg's way that you should answer the
- 16 question.
- 17 THE WITNESS: Okay.
- 18 MR. NESBITT: If you don't like the answer,
- 19 make your objection.
- MR. ESSENBURG: Okay.
- 21 A. So he cherry picks things from the past, such as
- 22 these allegations about the mother's sexual practices, the
- 23 mother's, you know, possible drug use, those things, and
- 24 uses those as if they're present examples of mom's
- 25 unfitness. And those aren't reputable, countable things,

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 236

- 1 but he convinces others that they are.
- 2 He -- the statements he makes about the
- 3 mother are negative to the point of untruthfulness. He
- 4 exaggerates the negativity aspect of what he believes about
- 5 the mother in order to convince whomever he's talking to
- 6 that she's a bad person.
- 7 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What -- any other facts?
- B A. I mean --
- 9 Q. I'm asking what facts has he twisted? I'm hearing
- 10 you -- CPS referrals --
- 11 A. Right.
- 12 Q. -- about sexual allegations and physical abuse,
- 13 sexual practices of the mother, and possible drug use.
- 14 Any other facts?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 16 A. Her -- just her care of the child, such as the --
- 17 I was trying to think of some -- there was a physical
- 18 health issue. Well, the -- the stomach issues that only
- 19 the father has reported; medical professionals have not
- 20 reported it, the mother has not found that to be an issue
- 21 for her. When the father reports it, he states as if it is
- 22 a fact that the doctor diagnosed it, that the child has it,
- 23 and that it's relat- -- he's stated specifically it's
- 24 because the child is anxious about going to the mother's
- 25 house, that when the stomach issue occurs it's because he

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 237

- doesn't want to see the mother, and that's just wholly not
- 2 true.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Anything else?
- 4 A. Nothing that I can think of right now.
- 5 O. Okay. So let me make sure I'm clear on what
- 6 you're saying.
- 7 The twisted facts are his referrals to CPS,
- 8 whether it be abuse for inappropriate sexual behavior or
- 9 physical abuse. That's one twisted fact.
- 10 The other one is the mother's sexual --
- 11 personal sexual life is two.
- 12 The third is the mother's possible drug use.
- 13 And fourth is the stomach medical issues with
- 14 the child.
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. Any others?
- 17 A. I mean, he alleges that the mother was trying to
- 18 kill herself in the truck incident -- in the vehicle
- 19 incident.
- 20 Q. That's --
- 21 A. The mother states that -- you know, and there was
- 22 audio that the child said that the father told him that.
- Q. So she tried to kill herself is five?
- 24 A. Yeah.
- Q. Okay. Any others?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 238 Not that I can think of. 1 Α. 2 Q. Okay. 3 MR. NESBITT: Excuse me, Counsel --4 THE WITNESS: No, I just thought it was the six-hour rule. 5 6 MR. NESBITT: It is the six-hour rule --7 THE WITNESS: Okay. 8 MR. NESBITT: -- but we got started late. 9 THE WITNESS: Yeah. 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me show you -- let me --Yeah. 11 Α. 12 -- Jennifer, bring your attention to Page 30. 0. Uh-huh. 13 Α. And you have the fourth concern is the father's 14 general lack of regard for safety and the father's 15 reluctance to adhere to rules and court orders. 16 17 Do you see that? 18 Α. Yes. 19 Do you have the same concern about the mother's failure to adhere and follow court orders? 20 21 Yes, and I mentioned that. 2.2 Okay. Was it brought to your attention that she Q. 23 had not paid some of the child support, as she was ordered 24 to pay, on out-of-pocket medical expenses? 25 That wasn't the issue I was thinking of. No, I Α.

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 239

- 1 don't -- I don't know about that.
- Q. What issue were you thinking of?
- 3 A. Just that she was not following -- there was an
- 4 order about communication, about phone calls when the child
- 5 was in the other parent's presence, and that the mother
- 6 wasn't allowing that. That was the one I knew of -- about.
- 7 Q. And -- okay. Let me show you Petitioner's Exhibit
- 8 Number 130, which is a letter from me to, I believe,
- 9 Mr. Whiddon over here --
- 10 A. Uh-huh. Yes.
- 11 Q. -- about paying out-of-pocket medical expenses;
- 12 that is, I'll represent to you, is child support.
- 13 A. October 2017.
- 14 Q. Uh-huh.
- 15 Are you aware that she did not pay the
- 16 out-of-pocket medical expenses --
- 17 A. No.
- 18 Q. -- to this day --
- 19 A. I wasn't aware of that.
- 20 Q. -- from October of 2017 through October of 2019?
- 21 A. No, I didn't.
- 22 Q. If she agreed not to steal company secrets and she
- 23 stole company secrets, would that create some concern for
- 24 **you?**
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Page 240

- 1 A. Sure.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So in your opinion, does -- is
- 3 the mother -- do you have a concern that the mother has a
- 4 reluctance to adhere to rules and court orders as well?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 30, and I'll
- 7 put on the screen there what I'm referring to. "The mother
- 8 alleged the child and the father" -- "and the father
- 9 confirmed the child continues to sleep in the father's bed
- 10 at his home, even though there was an order enjoining the
- 11 father from having the child sleep in his bed."
- 12 Do you see that?
- 13 A. Uh-huh. Yes.
- 14 Q. And when is the last time that you're aware that
- 15 **happened?**
- 16 A. I don't have a date. The father -- or, excuse me,
- 17 the child stated, when I interviewed him, that --
- 18 Q. When was that?
- 19 A. That would be in -- either in -- it would be in
- 20 August of 2018 -- that he likes to sleep in the father's
- 21 bed because it's cozy.
- Q. Okay. Do you -- are you concerned about that?
- 23 A. Somewhat. If there -- if there is something that
- 24 enjoins that is, I -- don't have proof of that, but
- 25 that's -- allegedly that's been an issue between the

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 241

- 1 parents, that he's had difficulty sleeping in his bed at
- 2 the mother's house; the mother asked the father if she
- 3 would -- if he would, you know, have the child sleep in his
- 4 own bed over there, and the father indicated that he had
- 5 agreed to that but that it sometimes still happens.
- 6 Q. Okay. Let me turn your attention to Page 30 where
- you state, "If true, the mother may have had this reaction
- 8 due to her (likely true) fears that the father would
- 9 utilize any communication to attempt to 'remind Lauriston'
- 10 about the message he has encouraged him to believe about
- 11 his mother."
- 12 Do you see that?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. Is it your position to this Court today that
- 15 you're able to know what the father's intent is?
- 16 A. I can make guesses about the father's intent, but
- 17 I don't know.
- 18 Q. So you can make guesses, but you don't know?
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. Your guess is that he's going to say something to
- 21 poison up the child against the mother? Is that your
- 22 guess?
- 23 A. Yes.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And the mother's the one that

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 242

- said that, My time is my time; you don't get to talk to the
- 2 father; is that correct?
- 3 A. Yes.
- Q. Or spirit to that effect?
- 5 A. Something similar, yes.
- 6 Q. It says there was a discussion about the mother
- 7 and interactions with her family, that they were never
- 8 good, but this perspective is likely influenced by the
- 9 father's opinion of the mother as well, but it also appears
- 10 that Lauriston has clearly received the message that the
- 11 mother and father do not get along and do not like each
- 12 other.
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. Is that your -- is it your opinion that the mother
- 15 does not like the father?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 17 A. Yes.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You stated on Page 31, "The
- 19 mother, like the father, places the child in the middle of
- 20 the parental conflict with her actions."
- 21 Do you stand by your words?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. I want to go back to a moment that you stated that
- 24 the mother believed that the -- she had -- that the father,
- 25 at some point, had pulled her out of the car where she got

Page 243

- 1 run over. You agree with me that, at least at the point of
- 2 Judge Siegel's custody evaluation, she did not say that
- 3 to -- Dr. Siegel -- but after this case started, she took
- 4 the position that she got pulled out of the car and got run
- 5 over due to the father's actions?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. I -- to the first part of your question, yes, I
- 8 believe that that was the case. That was her -- the
- 9 mother's belief about the acc- -- that it was an accident
- 10 at the time of Dr. Siegel's report.
- 11 I don't know when the time frame was that she
- 12 started having a different opinion about the father being
- involved. That was when she was seeing a counselor, and
- 14 that was at some point after 2013, but, again, I don't know
- 15 exactly when that was.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Was it your understanding that
- she went to see a counselor, and she had a sudden memory
- 18 recollection?
- 19 A. My understanding was that the mother began talking
- 20 about having bad dreams, about, like, reliving the incident
- or, like, flashbacks when she wasn't asleep, and that when
- 22 processing those events, that she came to believe that the
- 23 father had an active role in the accident.
- Q. Did she take the position that she had a sudden
- 25 **memory recall?**

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 244

- 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And did you investigate or
- 4 find out whether or not she met the personality profile or
- 5 criteria for sudden memory recall?
- 6 A. No.
- 7 Q. Why not?
- 8 A. I -- I'm not familiar with that term.
- 9 Q. Okay. You've heard of people that sud- -- go to a
- 10 therapist, and they remember back some sort of abuse years
- and years ago and it suddenly comes to light presently,
- 12 even though it happened years ago? You've heard of that
- 13 incident?
- 14 A. Yeah, that's --
- 15 **Q.** And that --
- 16 A. I've heard of that in terms of suggested memory.
- 17 Q. Okay. And you understand there's profiles for
- 18 that or certain criteria that either comports to that or
- 19 doesn't comport to that? Are you aware of that?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. Did you explore whether or not she -- whatever the
- 22 criteria are and whether she met that kind of criteria?
- 23 A. No.
- 24 Q. You just took her at her word?
- 25 A. Well, again, I -- this wasn't a topic I was going

Page 245

- 1 to be able to resolve, as I determined that they both are
- 2 going to believe what they believe about it and that the
- 3 differences in those beliefs are what my issue is with the
- 4 parents. I wasn't going to be able to do anything about
- 5 those beliefs.
- 6 Q. Are you aware that the mother tried to put the
- 7 father in jail on some money issues? In other words, she
- 8 brought an enforcement action and asked Judge Lopez to put
- 9 him in jail.
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 11 A. That was alleged to me, but I don't remember the
- 12 specifics.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would that be a possible use
- 14 of the system to kind of get your way --
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- in your opinion?
- 17 A. It could be.
- 18 Q. Would that indicate to you some level of anger and
- 19 a lack of ability to coparent with the other parent?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 21 A. Yes, it could.
- 22 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you anticipate this boy
- 23 having anxiety, not being able to see his father --
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 25 MR. NESBITT: Object- --

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 246

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- under your recommendation?
- 2 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Let me show you Page 32 of
- 5 your custody evaluation where you say, "The father is
- 6 involved in a pet health radio show and podcasts and he has
- 7 gotten the child involved in a podcast called 'Celebrities
- 8 and Cookies'."
- 9 See that?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. In your mind, is that a good thing or a bad thing?
- 12 A. I -- I don't --
- 13 Q. Or how would you describe it?
- 14 A. I don't see it as a black and white issue. I
- 15 think it's helped the child, you know, public speaking
- 16 and -- and meeting people, having an -- an idea of a
- 17 possible career for him. I think those are good things.
- 18 I think it's bad in the way that -- I mean,
- 19 the child reportedly indicated to the counselor that he
- 20 feels like he has to do that to support the father's
- 21 emotional investment in it, that he can't not do it. That
- 22 is a problem for me.
- Q. Did you ask this -- this boy that question, that
- 24 he -- do you -- that he feels he, quote, has to do it,
- 25 unquote?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 247

- 1 A. I don't recall if he was doing it at the time that
- 2 we -- that I interviewed him or not because it was later in
- 3 the process.
- 4 Q. Was this information you exclusively received from
- 5 Rochelle Ritzi?
- 6 A. What information?
- 7 Q. That the boy feels like he has to do it.
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. So you didn't ask him yourself?
- 10 A. Not that I recall, no.
- 11 Q. Is it possible that he just wants to please his
- 12 father and do that?
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. But you haven't made the determination yourself;
- 15 you've just relied on Rochelle Ritzi and her interviews?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 17 A. Correct.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. You -- let me turn your
- 19 attention to Page -- let's see here -- Page 33. "The
- 20 father's Monday visits to the school on the surface seem
- 21 benign; however, the deeper context is one indirectly
- 22 saying to the child that his mother may have harmed him
- 23 during her time."
- What forms the basis of your statement?
- 25 A. The -- the mother's description of that event was

Page 248

- 1 very specific. She talked about an incident that I think
- 2 the school may have mentioned about how --
- 3 Q. So is this the school or the mother talking?
- 4 A. Both.
- 5 O. Okay. What did the mother say?
- 6 A. She talked about the child contacted her at -- or
- 7 when she picked him up from school, he said, What -- like,
- 8 What happened to me on the weekend; Daddy was asking. And
- 9 that's when she discovered that the father was always doing
- 10 the Monday lunch visit after her weekends.
- 11 And then there was an incident where the
- 12 child reported that he was, like, picking at a hangnail,
- 13 and the father said, Are you hurting yourself because you
- 14 don't want to go to your mom's, and that he involved the
- 15 school personnel who didn't think it was an actual injury
- 16 but told the mom about it, saying that they believed the
- 17 father was trying to, you know, manipulate the child to say
- 18 that he didn't want to go with the mom.
- 19 Q. Were the -- was the mother there or the school
- 20 counselor there when that was said with -- between the
- 21 father and the son?
- 22 A. The -- a school personnel was called over, and --
- 23 and the father stated that to the school personnel.
- Q. Okay. So they didn't actually hear the father say
- 25 that to -- or ask that question of the boy?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 249

- 1 A. No, but I believe it was repeated to the school
- 2 personnel.
- 3 Q. Okay. When the mother reported to you the son
- 4 said, What happened -- the father asked, What happened to
- 5 you over the weekend, what's the difference between that
- 6 and, say, Hey, what hap- -- what did you do?
- 7 A. Not that there was anything negative about that,
- 8 but that's when she learned that the reason why the child
- 9 was asking that Monday afternoon was because then the child
- 10 said, Well, Daddy comes to see me every Monday after your
- 11 weekend. I'm just saying that's when she learned of that.
- 12 Q. Is it possible that Dad just wants to have lunch
- 13 with his son?
- 14 A. Sure.
- 15 Q. Is it possible that Dad just wants to say, Hey,
- 16 what's going on?
- 17 A. Sure.
- 18 Q. How did we get from there to Dad's doing something
- 19 evil? Deeper context, I believe is the word.
- 20 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 21 A. Because of the father's pattern of manipulation
- 22 and vindictiveness and --
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. What --
- 24 A. -- all the other things I've described about --
- 25 that other people have described about the behavior.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 250

- 1 Q. Okay. And what is the pattern of manipulation
- 2 that you're referring to?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 4 A. Trying to engage the child to not want to be with
- 5 the mother.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Anything else?
- 7 A. Trying to engage the school personnel to possibly
- 8 make another CPS referral because the child was hurting
- 9 himself.
- 10 Q. Okay. Kind of professional referrals?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. Okay. Anything else?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 14 A. Not that I can think of.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So the manipulation in that
- 16 scenario is professional referrals and trying to convince
- 17 the child not to be with his mother; is that correct?
- 18 A. Yes, that he doesn't want to be with his mother.
- 19 Q. Let me turn your attention to Page 33. And it
- 20 states, "The most distressing part of the father's agenda
- 21 about the mother is that Lauriston has reportedly been
- 22 exposed to ideas about disliking Vietnamese culture; this
- 23 is extremely damaging to his self-esteem as he is half
- 24 Vietnamese."
- What forms the basis of your statement?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 251

- 1 A. The things that the mother and stepfather describe
- 2 that the child has told them.
- 3 Q. So hearsay?
- 4 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 5 A. Basically everything I get in my evaluation is
- 6 hearsay, unless it's a written document. So...
- 7 O. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What did the mother and
- 8 stepfather report to you that leads you to write that the
- 9 father dislikes the Vietnamese culture?
- 10 A. Well, I think he gives them the idea that he's a
- 11 Crockett and that he's less of what the mom is. The child
- 12 told me -- he told me something about his culture, that he
- doesn't want to be -- he doesn't want to be Vietnamese or
- 14 he doesn't want to be Asian or something of that nature
- 15 when I spoke with him.
- 16 Q. Did he use those words, that he doesn't want to be
- 17 Asian?
- 18 A. I don't remember what word he used.
- 19 Q. Well, give me your best idea --
- 20 A. I think --
- 21 **Q.** -- of what words --
- 22 A. -- it was Vietnamese --
- 23 **Q.** -- he used.
- 24 A. -- I don't want to be Vietnamese.
- 25 Q. Are you able to recall or are you just kind of

Page 252

- 1 guessing?
- 2 A. I'm -- I don't think he used the word "Asian."
- 3 That was my word.
- 4 Q. Okay. Give me your best idea of what you can
- 5 recall.
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. That, I -- that he said, I don't want to be
- 8 Vietnamese.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) How do you link that to the
- 10 father?
- 11 A. Because the mother and stepfather's statements
- 12 that the child just told them things like, I'm a Crockett
- and I'm high, and you're a Ngo and you're low; and your
- 14 eyes are chinky, that he reportedly told that to mom.
- 15 Q. The son told that to Mother?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. So you linked that to the father because of the
- 18 mother and stepfather's words?
- 19 A. Yes, I believe that to be true.
- 20 Q. Do you believe that they were telling -- they were
- 21 being truthful to you?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. All right. Is the son protective of his father?
- 24 A. Yes.
- Q. Why do you think that is?

Page 253

- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form. 1
- 2 All children have a natural protectiveness of Α.
- their parents, but I believe especially so because the 3
- 4 father requires it.
- 5 (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And what forms the basis of 0.
- 6 why you say that the father requires it? What facts do you
- have?
- 8 Α. Because the child does -- is not protective of the
- 9 He's much more willing to say negative things
- 10 about the mother, which is unusual, which usually indicates
- that there's been some influence. 11
- 12 It's very unusual for a child to come into my
- 13 office and consistently say negative things about one
- parent and only positive things about the other parent. 14
- 15 That indicates influence, usually.
- Let me show you what I've marked as Petitioner's 16 Q.
- 17 Exhibit 105 and ask you if that was an email that you sent
- to Mr. Crockett? 18
- 19 Α. Yes.
- 20 Is it a true and accurate copy of your email to Q.
- 21 Mr. Crockett?
- 22 It appears to be, yes. Α.
- 23 Q. And the date of that is May 29th, 2019?
- 24 Yes. Α.
- 25 Okay. Did you believe that the father was Q.

Page 254

- 1 alienating the mother?
- 2 A. I sent it to both parents. The subject line was
- 3 the subject line of the previous message. So I didn't
- 4 change the subject line, but I cc'd the mother, the -- the
- 5 ad litem and the counselor and yourself. And --
- 6 Q. Okay.
- 7 A. And then I ended up -- I didn't have your email,
- 8 so I did it again to your email, I believe, or to Chris's.
- 9 I don't remember.
- 10 MR. ESSENBURG: Objection, nonresponsive.
- 11 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you believe the father was
- 12 alienating the mother?
- 13 A. I believe they both were.
- 14 Q. Okay. Is it your opinion that the mother's
- 15 alienation doesn't matter as much as the father's
- 16 alienation?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. All alienation is bad.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. May I see that?
- 21 A. (Witness returns document to Counsel.)
- Q. Would you agree with me that any social studies
- 23 require that you use evidence-based information in making
- 24 your recommendations?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 255

- 1 Q. What does that mean to you?
- 2 A. That means that you use your collective experience
- 3 of, you know, clinical information, of child development
- 4 information, all the research regarding access schedules
- 5 and parenting plans to provide the best recommendation for
- 6 children.
- 7 Q. Did you do that?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. 107.108 of the Family Code calls for verification
- 10 of each fact statement made and the sources. Did you do
- 11 that also?
- 12 A. Yes, to the extent that I was able to.
- 13 Q. If the mother lied about certain things or
- 14 embellished facts about certain things, would that possibly
- 15 change your recommendation?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 17 A. I don't know that it would change my
- 18 recommendation.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So if she lied to you, you
- 20 would -- you're not sure it would change your
- 21 recommendation?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 23 A. I don't know.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 256

- 1 A. It would depend on what the lie was about, I
- 2 quess.
- 3 Q. Do you believe it would increase the amount of
- 4 potential error in your recommendation if you did not look
- 5 at data?
- 6 MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would that be a limitation on
- 9 your report if you did not look at data?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 11 A. I don't know what data you're speaking of.
- 12 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Evidence received -- received
- or not received by you, either coming from the mother or
- 14 the father or other sources.
- 15 A. I mean, there's always a potential for more
- 16 information to further hone my recommendation one way or
- 17 the other. More information is usually better. But I have
- 18 to base my recommendations on the information I had at the
- 19 time.
- 20 Q. So would it increase your potential error if you
- 21 did not look at all the data or the evidence that was
- 22 presented to you?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And would that be a limitation

Page 257

- on your report if you didn't look at all the information
- 2 that you were offered?
- 3 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 4 A. It may.
- 5 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What is your opinion on the
- 6 reliability of receiving information from a former spouse
- 7 or the mother without any mental health records?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. I'm sorry, I don't -- I don't know to what you're
- 10 referring.
- 11 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What is -- what do you
- 12 perceive to be the reliability of the information you
- 13 received from the mother and the stepfather?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.
- 15 A. I mean, I don't know how to quantify that.
- 16 They --
- 17 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you think they were
- 18 truthful and reliable in all the information that they gave
- 19 **you?**
- 20 A. Nobody is truthful and reliable by all the
- 21 information ever.
- Q. Okay. How would you characterize, in your mind,
- 23 the information that they gave you? By and large, was it
- 24 reliable, truthful?
- MR. WHIDDON: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 258

- 1 A. I believe so, yes.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Do you feel like you've
- 3 got an obligation to review all the available information
- 4 so that the Court has the clearest picture possible
- 5 regarding the child's best interest?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. Yes, but there's no way I can always receive
- 8 everything I've requested, for example.
- 9 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would you agree with me that
- 10 it's difficult to know what information is relevant unless
- 11 you've reviewed it?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And if you refuse to accept or
- 15 review it, that this could create a significant error and
- 16 possibly a violation of the Court's order, per the Texas
- 17 Family Code 107?
- 18 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 19 A. We've talked about this as an office policy, and
- 20 our office policy is that we do not always accept every
- 21 single document that's provided to us. We try to keep
- 22 things within the range of the time frame and the specifics
- of the case, and so we, you know, give that determination
- 24 personally for each case. It's a case-by-case basis.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You agree with me that if you

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 259

- 1 didn't review certain information, it could result in your
- 2 recommendation being faulty?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 3
- 4 Α. Yes.
- 0. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) The last contact that you had
- 6 with the father and child together was 20- -- October 2018;
- is that correct?
- 8 Α. Yes.
- 9 And, if so, that's a year ago?
- 10 Α. Yes.
- Would you agree with me, to some degree, this 11 Q.
- 12 custody evaluation now is out of date?
- 13 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- In -- in some ways, I'm sure it is. 14 Α.
- (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Would you agree with me that 15 Q.
- evaluators can't rely on the parties to furnish all the 16
- 17 facts?
- 18 Α. Correct. Yes, that's true.
- 19 I -- I, myself, sent you a international study and
- 20 a peer-reviewed article, did I not?
- 21 Α. Yes, three times.
- Did I do it three times? 2.2 Q.
- 23 Α. Yes.
- 24 Q. Sorry.
- 25 Let me show you what's marked as Petitioner's

Page 260

- 1 Exhibit 111 and 112. Let me show you Petitioner's
- 2 Exhibit 112. Is this a letter that I sent to you, that you
- 3 received and read?
- 4 A. Yes.
- 5 Q. And when I sent you the research article, is this
- 6 the research article that I sent you that's identified as
- 7 Petitioner's Exhibit 111?
- 8 A. I don't know that I received the research article,
- 9 although I did look up some other things on my own. I
- 10 don't remember whether I was sent --
- 11 Q. You understand --
- 12 A. -- this entire --
- 13 Q. -- that was attached to that email (indicating)?
- 14 A. I -- it must have been. I did read this.
- 15 Q. Okay. Would you agree with me that that is a
- 16 peer-reviewed research article by some of the top
- 17 psychologists and scientists in the world?
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. And it's titled Shared Physical Custody: Does It
- 20 Benefit Most Children?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. And did you read it?
- 23 A. Yes.
- Q. Do you agree that it's supported by
- 25 111 international experts in psychology?

Page 261

- 1 A. That sounds correct.
- 2 Q. And it consolidated 40 peer-reviewed published
- 3 studies and academic journals?
- 4 A. That sounds correct.
- 5 Q. And among the eminent group of scholars and
- 6 researchers, there were 11 people who held major
- 7 professional associations, two former presidents of the
- 8 American Psychological Association, five university
- 9 vice presidents and provosts or deans, 14 professors
- 10 emerita, and 17 department chairs?
- 11 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 12 A. Okay. I don't recall those specific numbers.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. You realize that's in
- 14 the article -- that's identified in --
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. -- that article?
- 17 A. But I don't remember the specific numbers.
- 18 Q. Fair enough. Fair enough. That's a kind of
- 19 detail that you might not remember, but you agree -- well,
- 20 certainly you're free to look at it, and if I misstated
- 21 something you can correct the deposition if I have
- 22 misstated the experts in that field that are identified in
- 23 that article.
- In the study, it states on Page 137 that,
- 25 Finally, even though most children acknowledge that living

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 262

- in two homes is sometimes an inconvenient hassle, they feel
- 2 the benefits outweigh the inconvenience; one of the most
- 3 beneficial outcomes linked into shared parenting is the
- 4 children maintaining a loving, meaningful relationship with
- 5 both parents; given this, we need to keep in mind that this
- 6 particular benefit may not become apparent until later in
- 7 the children's lives; so although the children who are
- 8 living almost exclusively with one parent may appear to be
- 9 doing, quote, just fine, unquote, at present the
- 10 relationship with the other parent is more likely to be
- 11 weakened or to be irreparably damaged as time goes by, and
- 12 that disadvantage may last a lifetime.
- 13 A. Yes.
- 14 Q. Did you understand that?
- 15 A. Yes.
- 16 Q. Did you believe that the mother and father in this
- 17 scenario is a high-conflict case?
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. Did you believe -- Dr. Siegel recommended equal
- 20 possession; you've recommended the mother have everything
- 21 but three hours a week. Do you agree with that?
- 22 A. Yes.
- Q. Do you have any research that undermines this
- 24 article by these experts?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Page 263

- 1 A. My intent writing the report was not to undermine
- 2 an article, so I don't think that could be characterized --
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Do you have any
- 4 research that backs up yours that contradicts their -- the
- 5 article that I gave you?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. What I know, two things: One is that the shared
- 8 custody schedule that Dr. Siegel recommended was
- 9 implemented because the child was doing so well in both
- 10 homes. The child was barely verbal at the time.
- What has changed over time is that the father
- 12 has worked on this child for years to -- for the child to
- 13 be against the mother and to be sided with the father.
- 14 That has begun to damage this child in an irreversible way.
- In those cases, I would never recommend
- 16 shared parenting schedules.
- 17 MR. ESSENBURG: Let me object to you as being
- 18 nonresponsive.
- 19 THE WITNESS: Okay.
- 20 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you have any peer-reviewed
- 21 research articles that backs up your position and your
- 22 recommendation consistent with the facts of this case?
- 23 A. No.
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) It's just your clinical

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 264

- 1 opinion?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 4 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Are you able to report to any
- 5 reliability on your recommendations and research behind it?
- 6 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 7 A. Not any specific articles that I can quote to you,
- 8 but children don't do well when they're taught to hate the
- 9 other parent. I know that for a fact.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) What methodology did you use
- 11 to arrive at your recommendations?
- 12 A. I mean, I used the standards of care outlined in
- 13 the AFCC guidelines. I used Best Interest of The Child
- 14 quidelines from the --
- 15 Q. I'm sorry, A- -- can you identify --
- 16 A. Yes, I'm sorry.
- 17 Q. -- not use initials and --
- 18 A. American Family and Conciliatory Courts -- I'm
- 19 sorry, I can't say that word. Conciliatory, yes --
- 20 Q. I think that's pretty good.
- 21 A. -- courts.
- Their best practices guidelines and then also
- 23 the Family Code, Best Interest of The Child guidelines, and
- 24 then the -- I'm sorry, my mind is -- I can't think of the
- 25 other guideline that our office always uses.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 265

- 1 Q. Did you use the American Psychological Association
- 2 Ethics Code?
- 3 A. I didn't not use it, but specifically we don't
- 4 practice under that guideline because I'm not an APA
- 5 member. I go by the LPC code of conduct, licensed
- 6 professional counselor code of conduct.
- Q. If you assumed that the father was narcissistic,
- 8 did you check collateral persons that had hands-on
- 9 experience when he and the child were parenting? When I
- 10 say "check collateral persons," did you call them and talk
- 11 to them?
- 12 A. I -- I'm not understanding how that has to do with
- 13 the personality disorder issue.
- 14 Q. You assumed he had a narcissistic personality; is
- 15 that correct?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 17 A. I didn't assume it. I collected that
- 18 information --
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You --
- 20 A. -- from lots of --
- 21 Q. I'm sorry.
- 22 A. -- different sources.
- Q. I misspoke. You collected information and made a
- 24 diagnosis that he could be exhibiting narcissistic traits?
- 25 A. Yes.

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

Page 266

- 1 Q. And did you check with collateral persons or other
- 2 people with hands-on experience with him and the child and
- 3 his parenting to corroborate those narcissistic traits?
- 4 A. Yes. I got lots of documentation of those things.
- 5 O. And who are those?
- 6 A. The child's three counselors, the school.
- 7 Q. They -- they all said that he had a narcissistic
- 8 personality
- 9 A. They described his controlling, manipulative
- 10 behavior. They described facets of the narcissistic
- 11 pattern. They didn't diagnose that.
- 12 Q. Anybody else other than the three counselors?
- 13 A. The school.
- 14 Q. And who are the -- by the way, who are the three
- 15 counselors again?
- 16 A. Rochelle Ritzi, Becky Berg (sic), and what --
- 17 what -- I always get her name wrong. Becky Bergthold,
- 18 B-e-r-g-t-h-o-l-d, and Dr. Sauer.
- 19 Q. When did you -- when was their exposure to him?
- 20 What year did Dr. Sauer have interaction with him and what
- 21 year did Becky Bergthold --
- 22 A. Uh-huh.
- 23 Q. -- have interaction with him?
- 24 A. It was --
- MR. WHIDDON: Hey, Randy, can we go off the

Page 267 1 record real quick? 2 MR. ESSENBURG: I'm getting pretty close to finishing. 3 4 MR. WHIDDON: Well, how much longer do you 5 think you'll need? 6 MR. ESSENBURG: I've just got a few pages, 7 and we're done. 8 MR. WHIDDON: I mean --9 MR. NESBITT: Is that 30 minutes or two 10 hours? 11 MR. WHIDDON: Yeah, that's what I need to 12 know. 13 MR. ESSENBURG: Yeah, less than 30 minutes. 14 MR. WHIDDON: Well, then, I mean, I don't 15 think there's any need for me to stick around if you're going to be asking -- well, are we on the record? Can we 16 17 just go off the record? MR. ESSENBURG: No. Let's finish -- why 18 19 don't we finish? It's 30 -- I'm within 30 minutes. 20 MR. NESBITT: Let's go off the record because I need to use the restroom. I'm sorry. 21 22 MR. ESSENBURG: All right. 23 (Recess taken from 5:09 p.m. to 5:14 p.m.) 24 MR. WHIDDON: So it is my understanding 25 Respondent -- Respondent -- Counsel Justin Whiddon here for

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 268 1 Nikki Ngo -- that we have an agreement of Counsel that I 2 would reserve all my questioning of Ms. Frendle for future hearing or trial. 3 4 MR. NESBITT: No opposition from us. 5 MR. ESSENBURG: No objection. 6 MR. WHIDDON: All right. Then that is our 7 agreement. 8 MR. NESBITT: Thank you. 9 MR. ESSENBURG: Are we back on the record? 10 MR. NESBITT: Yes. 11 MR. ESSENBURG: I guess we were on the 12 record. 13 (Mr. Whiddon leaves deposition room.) (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Jennifer, we're back on the 14 Q. You understand that? 15 record. 16 Α. Yes. 17 Do you assume that if somebody has narcissistic Q. traits, that he or she is a bad parent? 18

- 19 A. No, not necessarily.
- Q. Okay. So you can be narcissistic and not be a bad
- 21 parent?
- 22 A. Yes.
- 23 Q. Is it fair to say in your custody evaluation you
- 24 did not make -- you did not find the father committed any
- 25 family violence; is that correct?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 269

- 1 A. Correct.
- 2 Q. And in your evaluation, you did not find the
- 3 father abused drugs?
- 4 A. Correct.
- 5 Q. And in your evaluation, you did not find the
- 6 father abused alcohol?
- 7 A. Correct.
- 8 Q. At some point, you found the father's behavior
- 9 abusive?
- 10 A. I don't know to what you're referring.
- 11 Q. Did you get to a place where you didn't like the
- 12 things that the father did or you considered his actions
- 13 alienating?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. To the point that it's abusive?
- 16 A. Yes.
- 17 Q. Did you come to a place where you disliked the
- 18 father as a person?
- 19 A. No.
- 20 Q. Do you find the DSM-5 manual authoritative?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. Are you aware that the DSM-5 manual cautions
- 23 forensic evaluators from using a diagnosis in forensic
- 24 settings --

Electronically signed by Amy Massey (401-010-081-3772)

25 A. Yes.

Page 270

- 1 Q. -- stating that there are significant risks the
- 2 diagnosis information will be misused or misunderstood?
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. And on Page 19 of the DSM-5 manual that a
- 5 personality disorder is not established by merely attaching
- 6 the disorder's diagnostic criteria to cherry pick the
- 7 events formed in the litigant's life?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Do you agree with that?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. For example, a brain surgeon might be very
- 13 particular and detail-oriented and fussy in all the things
- 14 they need to be fussy about, in other words compulsive, and
- 15 that in and of itself, being compulsive, could be a good
- 16 thing?
- 17 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) In brain surgeons, for
- 20 example?
- 21 A. Yes.
- 22 Q. That actresses may be more emotionally expressive
- 23 than your typical population; in other words, having a
- 24 histrionic personality?
- 25 A. They may be on that spectrum, yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 271

- 1 Q. Would you agree that -- in your experience, that,
- 2 under litigation stress, particularly family law cases,
- 3 that each parent and fathers may express extreme
- 4 characteristics of a personality style in the middle of
- 5 their custody evaluation?
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. How did you apply the DSM-5 diagnosis to
- 8 distinguish normal personality traits during litigation
- 9 from a personality disorder?
- 10 A. Well, first of all, I didn't diagnose him with a
- 11 personality disorder; I said he had traits suggestive of
- 12 those features. But I would say a specific answer would be
- 13 the extremes in each of the father's behaviors met the
- 14 standard that was, you know, deviant from normal behavior.
- 15 In other words, it wasn't just that he likes himself, it
- 16 was excessive admiration, need for approval. Everything
- 17 that met that standard was excessive in nature.
- 18 Q. If the mother did some of the following, for
- 19 example, called him a con man, believes that he attempted
- 20 to kill her by running over her with a car, did Ecstasy,
- 21 doesn't let the son talk to the father, the boyfriend is
- 22 angry at the father in your social study, and they report
- 23 to police possible abuse, doesn't that indicate a lot of
- anger by the mother and stepfather towards the father?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

Page 272

- 1 A. I mean, some of those things do.
- Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Any of them don't?
- A. Well, I don't know how the mother using Ecstasy in
- 4 the past has to do with being angry at the father.
- 5 Q. Other than that one?
- 6 A. No.
- 7 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 8 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) How do you -- you would agree
- 9 with me that the mother exhibited some anger and some
- 10 alienating behaviors?
- 11 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 12 A. Yes.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So how do you reconcile giving
- 14 sole managing conservator to a mother that exhibited
- 15 alienating behaviors and recommended that the recipient of
- some of the alienating behaviors receive three hours a week
- 17 supervised?
- 18 A. Because I only had these two parents to choose
- 19 from, and --
- 20 Q. So -- sorry, go ahead.
- 21 A. -- so I chose the parent that was less influential
- 22 on -- directly on the child.
- 23 Q. Do you -- given the state of mind of the mother
- 24 and the stepfather, do you anticipate in the future more
- 25 alienating behaviors?

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 273

- 1 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 2 A. I think it will actually relieve the situation.
- 3 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) How?
- 4 A. Because the father is not working on the child,
- 5 which is what the mother sees as a threat. If he doesn't
- 6 have any access but supervised, then that issue won't be as
- 7 prominent for the mother.
- 8 Q. But didn't you describe the mother's -- some of
- 9 her behavior as being alienating of father: she calls him
- 10 a con man, believes he attempted to hurt her, had -- she
- 11 has to protect the child from him, doesn't let the son talk
- 12 to his father? How do you expect that person completely in
- 13 charge of the son's possession period to cooperate and
- enhance the father/child relationship?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 16 A. I don't know that she can, but I know the -- the
- 17 father definitely cannot.
- 18 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. So if you have one that
- 19 definitely cannot and one that may or may not, how do you
- 20 make a recommendation that the one that may or may not
- 21 get -- get all the time except three hours?
- 22 A. Because it's to limit the -- the conflict is what
- 23 is harming the child so greatly, the conflict and the --
- 24 the tension between the two households. That's what I
- 25 believe makes the father work so hard on the child to

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 274

- 1 choose him, is it's this battle. If the battle is removed,
- 2 then the child is removed from the middle of that scenario.
- 3 Q. So if mother wins, this child is going to be
- 4 better?
- 5 A. I wouldn't characterize it as that.
- 6 Q. If the mother gets all hours of the week, save and
- 7 except three hours, this child is going to be better?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 9 A. I would hope so.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Okay. Do you know so?
- 11 A. Of course not. I don't know anything for a fact.
- 12 Q. And you don't have any research to back up your
- 13 clinical position, do you?
- 14 A. I didn't say I didn't have research; I said I
- 15 can't think of a name or cite a specific article to you.
- 16 Q. Would you think about it and then, with time,
- 17 produce that research -- peer-reviewed scientific research
- 18 that says, under these similar-type circumstances, this
- 19 child is going to be better with the father only receiving
- 20 three hours a week?
- 21 A. I'll --
- 22 MR. NESBITT: Objection. We'll take that
- 23 request under advisement. I don't think that's an
- 24 appropriate request in a deposition.
- 25 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Was there -- did you have the

Page 275

- 1 ability to recommend something other than three hours a
- week for the father to cure the problem with the father,
- 3 such as recommending an equal possession but reduce the
- 4 access in the event the father commits further alienating
- 5 behaviors? Was that a possibility as a recommendation for
- 6 you?
- 7 A. No.
- 8 Q. Why is that?
- 9 A. I don't think the father can. He hasn't been able
- 10 to stop so far. I don't know what would make him want to
- 11 stop.
- 12 Q. So your position is you have made the clinical
- judgment call that you just don't think he can do it?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 15 A. Correct.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And do you believe that when
- 17 you make that judgment call and this child sees his father
- 18 three hours a week, do you believe there will be any
- 19 emotional damage for that judgment call?
- 20 A. Likely, yes.
- 21 Q. Do you believe the damage is short-term,
- 22 medium-term, long-term?
- 23 A. I hope it's short-term.
- 24 Q. Okay. Do you have any research to back that up?
- 25 A. Not that I can quote specifically to you.

Page 276

- 1 Q. Did you use any research before you wrote down
- 2 your recommendations on your custody evaluation?
- 3 Α. Yes.
- What research did you use before you wrote down
- your evaluations? 5
- 6 A. Well, I looked at the plan that Warshak has talked
- 7 about with alienation cases in which basically one parent
- 8 is removed from the situation.
- 9 So does Warshak ever discuss a scenario where you Q.
- 10 have two parents that are both actively alienating?
- 11 Α. Sure. Yes.
- What did he recommend? 12 0.
- 13 Α. I don't recall.
- So even though you don't recall, you still made 14
- that recommendation knowing there's one parent that is 15
- alienating that is getting dominant time? 16
- 17 Α. Because I don't believe the alienation is equal,
- so I didn't see it as an equal scenario. 18
- 19 But you do see emotional damage for this boy to be Q.
- 20 away from his father?
- It will be difficult for him. 21
- 2.2 Do you believe you -- your recommendation is Q.
- 23 draconian in scope?
- 24 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 25 No, I wouldn't describe it as such. Α.

Page 277

- 1 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You recommended the father not
- 2 have access to a concealed weapon; is that correct?
- 3 A. Yes.
- Q. So you were fearful of him?
- 5 A. Yes.
- 6 Q. Any reason you didn't recommend more than three
- 7 hours per week? In other words, some stepped-up, graduated
- 8 scale to something different than three hours per week.
- 9 A. Not specifically. That specific time frame comes
- 10 from what the places that provide supervised access are
- 11 usually able to do, unfortunately. I wish it were more
- 12 time.
- 13 MR. ESSENBURG: I'll pass the witness.
- 14 (Witness passed at 5:26 p.m.)
- 15 EXAMINATION
- 16 BY MR. NESBITT:
- 17 Q. Ms. Frendle, in your report, in addition to the
- 18 recommendation that Counsel has focused on relative to the
- 19 possession, you did recommend other things, correct?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. And that includes counseling?
- 22 A. Yes.
- 23 Q. Counseling for the father?
- 24 A. Yes.
- 25 Q. And counseling for the mother?

Page 278

- 1 A. Yes.
- 2 Q. Why did you recommend counseling for both the
- 3 mother and the father?
- 4 A. Because they both have issues that they need to
- 5 work on to be better people and better parents.
- 6 Q. Did you recommend counseling because you believe
- 7 that, with counseling, they can both improve on their
- 8 behavior?
- 9 A. Yes.
- 10 Q. And become better parents?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. That goes for the mother and the father?
- 13 A. Correct.
- 14 Q. Earlier this morning, in response to a question
- 15 from Counsel about producing your file, he asked you if you
- 16 produced your entire file.
- 17 Do you recall that?
- 18 A. Yes.
- 19 Q. And you said that you had?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. In fact, we have withheld certain documents based
- 22 on your -- the advice of counsel, correct?
- 23 A. Yes.
- 24 Q. And those were primarily the CPS records?
- 25 A. That is the only record I know of that was

Page 279

- 1 withheld.
- 2 Q. All right. So with respect to producing the
- 3 entire file, we just wanted to clarify that we haven't
- 4 produced the entire file?
- 5 A. Correct.
- 6 Q. All right. In response to some of Counsel's
- 7 questions, he kept asking you whether this was a hunch or
- 8 that was a hunch. Is your report based on hunches?
- 9 A. No, not hunches and not guesses. It's based on my
- 10 clinical experience, my collective information, sources I
- 11 reviewed, all of the information put together.
- 12 Q. And just for the record, the word "hunch" was
- 13 Counsel's word, not yours, correct?
- 14 A. Yes.
- 15 Q. Do you remember when Mr. Essenburg showed you a
- document, I think it came out of your report or a quote,
- 17 regarding father reporting that the mother had stole --
- 18 stealing trade secrets or stealing documents? Do you
- 19 remember that?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. All right. And then he also showed you a document
- 22 relative to that discussion.
- 23 A. Yes.
- 24 Q. Do you remember that?
- 25 That was marked as an exhibit, I believe; is

Page 280

- 1 that correct?
- 2 A. Yes.
- 3 MR. ESSENBURG: Earl, can I interject
- 4 something real quick?
- 5 MR. NESBITT: Certainly.
- 6 MR. ESSENBURG: Are you going to have a
- 7 fairly long discussion?
- 8 MR. NESBITT: No. This and two other
- 9 questions.
- MR. ESSENBURG: Okay.
- 11 MR. NESBITT: But I can stop if you need to.
- MR. ESSENBURG: No, it's okay. Go ahead.
- 13 MR. NESBITT: Okay. I just need to find that
- 14 one document. It's the Rule 11.
- 15 MR. ESSENBURG: Yes, I think I know where it
- 16 is.
- 17 Q. (BY MR. NESBITT) I'm going to show you what
- 18 Counsel marked as Exhibit 132.
- 19 A. Yes.
- 20 Q. Do you remember Mr. Essenburg showing you that in
- 21 the context of the quote from your report about the
- 22 allegation that the father made about the mother stealing
- 23 documents?
- 24 A. Yes.
- Q. All right. And he showed you -- on Page 2, he

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 281

- 1 highlighted the quote.
- Do you see that?
- 3 A. Yes.
- 4 Q. And does that highlighted portion that he had you
- 5 read and confirm that was in the document, does that say
- 6 anything about stealing documents?
- 7 A. No.
- 8 Q. All right. Is there -- and I'm just going to ask
- 9 you just to briefly look through that Rule 11 Agreement and
- 10 see if there's -- anywhere in there there's talk about the
- 11 word stealing. Is that used anywhere in that document?
- 12 Feel free to take a second.
- 13 A. No.
- 14 Q. Okay. And to be clear, you don't know what this
- 15 lawsuit involved, what allegations were made?
- 16 A. No, I don't.
- 17 Q. Do you understand what a Rule 11 Letter Agreement
- 18 **is?**
- 19 A. It's -- I understand in the context of it's an
- 20 agreement between the parties to settle the case or to
- 21 confirm some facts of the case.
- Q. All right. And, in fact, on Page 3, it says here,
- 23 The Plaintiffs agree to nonsuit the above-styled and
- 24 numbered cause with prejudice?
- 25 A. Yes.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 282

- 1 Q. You understand that basically means the case was
- 2 over and dismissed?
- A. Yes.
- 4 Q. One other thing. Counsel asked you about an
- 5 affidavit by Mr. -- Dr. Siegel, I believe.
- 6 A. Yes.
- 7 Q. Do you remember that?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. And he showed you that, what's been marked as
- 10 Exhibit 104, correct?
- 11 A. Yes.
- 12 Q. And that is actually not an affidavit; that is a
- 13 letter in which --
- 14 MR. ESSENBURG: Objection, form. That is an
- 15 affi- --
- 16 Q. (BY MR. NESBITT) Do you understand what that
- 17 letter, what that --
- 18 MR. ESSENBURG: That is an affidavit.
- 19 Q. (BY MR. NESBITT) Do you understand that that is
- 20 an affidavit?
- MR. ESSENBURG: Yes.
- 22 A. It says --
- MR. NESBITT: Excuse me.
- 24 A. -- "text of the affidavit."
- 25 Q. (BY MR. NESBITT) Yeah. It's -- it is not

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

7afecfa5-6c1c-479e-9f3b-acb553a71be6

Page 283

- 1 notarized, is it?
- 2 A. No.
- Q. Okay. This appears to me to be a letter on
- 4 Dr. Siegel's letterhead. Is that what it appears to be to
- 5 **you?**
- 6 A. Yes.
- Q. And it's addressed to Ramon de Jesus Rodriquez?
- 8 A. Yes.
- 9 Q. Do you know Mr. -- who Mr. de Jesus Rodriquez is?
- 10 A. No.
- 11 Q. All right. In response -- and in his questions to
- 12 you, Counsel, in asking you about Petitioner's Exhibit 104,
- 13 asked you about concerns -- would you have concerns if the
- 14 Respondent -- I'm sorry, I think it's the Respondent, the
- 15 mother, had committed perjury.
- 16 A. Yes, I remember that.
- 17 Q. All right. Anywhere on that -- and he was
- 18 specifically focusing on the last page.
- 19 Do you see that?
- 20 A. Yes.
- 21 Q. And there's three paragraphs on the last page
- 22 which appears to be from Dr. Siegel. Does Dr. Siegel say
- 23 anywhere in there that the respondent had committed
- 24 perjury?
- 25 A. No.

Page 284

- All right. He talks about falsehoods and 1 Q.
- 2 untruths, but he doesn't say "perjury," does he?
- 3 Α. Correct.
- Again, that's Counsel's word, not yours?
- Α. Yes.
- 6 And it's not even Dr. Siegel's words, is it?
- I --Α.
- 8 MR. ESSENBURG: I'm going to object as to
- 9 form.
- I don't know whose words it is. 10 Α.
- MR. NESBITT: All right. Pass the witness. 11
- 12 (Witness passed at 5:32 p.m.)
- 13 MR. ESSENBURG: Redirect here.
- 14 FURTHER EXAMINATION
- BY MR. ESSENBURG: 15
- Ms. -- or Jennifer, you got this letter, didn't 16 Q.
- 17 you, Petitioner's Exhibit 104?
- 18 Α. Yes.
- 19 March 27th, 2019? Q.
- 20 Α. Yes.
- 21 Q. Before you wrote the custody evaluation?
- 22 Α. Yes.
- 23 Q. And it was from Dr. Siegel making statements, was
- he not? 24
- 25 Α. That's what it appears to be.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 285

- 1 Q. And he says "affidavit" in there, does he not, of
- 2 Dr. Siegel?
- 3 A. It says, "Text of the affidavit," yes.
- Q. Did you doubt that was from Dr. Siegel?
- 5 A. No.
- 6 Q. Did you believe it was from Dr. Siegel?
- 7 A. Yes.
- 8 Q. And so the words that you read here you believe
- 9 were from Dr. Siegel?
- 10 A. Yes.
- 11 Q. Did Dr. Siegel write, "In my opinion, a parent
- 12 that falsely accuses the other parent of such behavior, an
- 13 attempt to cause serious bodily harm is being untruthful;
- 14 such behaviors are very serious and raise significant
- 15 concerns about the parent's ability to serve as a primary
- 16 parent"?
- 17 Did he say that?
- 18 A. That's what it says.
- 19 Q. Do you have some sort of disagreement about what
- it means to lie and not lie? Do you believe that
- 21 Dr. Siegel believes she was lying? Lying.
- 22 A. I believe he thinks that, yes.
- Q. Okay. If she made these statements to you under
- 24 oath, that would be perjury, wouldn't it?
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 286

- 1 A. I guess.
- 2 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) Did you pick up the phone and
- 3 call Dr. Siegel and say, Hey, Dr. Siegel, in your opinion,
- 4 was she lying?
- 5 A. No.
- 6 Q. Why not?
- 7 A. Because I -- I don't believe it to be the truth,
- 8 but I believe that Mom believes it is the truth.
- 9 Q. Okay. Part of your recommendation is that, in
- 10 this -- the three hours for the dad and the rest of the
- 11 time for the mother during the week, that that -- in your
- 12 mind, that kind of cures the alienation by the father
- 13 against the mother?
- 14 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. It's beyond
- 15 the scope.
- 16 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) You can answer.
- 17 A. I mean, I don't know that I'd classify it as that,
- 18 no.
- 19 Q. Well, it addresses or minimizes the alienation; is
- 20 that correct?
- 21 A. Yes.
- Q. And if you -- turns out you're sending that child
- 23 to an alienator and they have 167 hours a week or 164 hours
- 24 a week and the other parent has 3 hours a week, but turns
- out the alienator has 164 hours a week, that would not

Page 287

- 1 remedy the situation, would it?
- 2 A. No.
- 3 Q. In fact, it could make it worse, could it not?
- 4 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 5 A. It could.
- 6 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) And your custody evaluation is
- 7 based on the mother telling you the truth; is that
- 8 correct --
- 9 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 10 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- in -- in large
- 11 part --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 13 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- that she wasn't lying --
- MR. NESBITT: Sorry.
- 15 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) -- to you?
- 16 A. I wouldn't -- I wouldn't minimize it that much. I
- 17 wouldn't --
- 18 Q. So she could lie to you, and you'd be okay with
- 19 all of that? I mean, it's just --
- MR. NESBITT: Objection, form.
- 21 A. I wouldn't narrow the definition of whether my
- 22 report is based on lies or truths to be the sum total of
- 23 what I'm doing.
- 24 Q. (BY MR. ESSENBURG) So if the mother said, Hey,
- 25 that guy -- the father's got 25 child molestation

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

Page 288 convictions and that's not true, that wouldn't impact your 1 2 evaluation? 3 Well, that likely would. Α. 4 Q. Okay. That's not what she said, though. Α. 6 Q. And Dr. Siegel told you she was lying, didn't he? 7 He said he felt she was lying, yes. Α. 8 Q. Okay. You disregarded this, didn't you? 9 MR. NESBITT: Objection, form. 10 Α. No. 11 MR. ESSENBURG: Okay. Pass the witness. 12 MR. NESBITT: No questions. 13 (End of proceedings at 5:36 p.m.) 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25

> Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

		Page	289
1	WITNESS: JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC		
2	DATE TAKEN: OCTOBER 29, 2019		
3	CORRECTIONS AND SIGNATURE		
4			
5			
6			
7			
8			
9			
10			
11			
12			
13			
14			
15			
16			
17			
18			
19			
20			
21			
22			
23			
24			
25			

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

	Page 290
1	I, JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC, have read the foregoing deposition and hereby affix my signature that same is true
2	and correct, except as noted above.
3	
4	JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC
5	THE STATE OF)
6	COUNTY OF)
7	Before me,, on this day personally
8	appeared JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC, known to me (or proved to me under oath or through) (description of
9	identity card or other document) to be the person whose name is subscribed to the foregoing instrument and
	acknowledged to me that they executed the same for the
10	purposes and consideration therein expressed.
11	Given under my hand and seal of office thisday of
12	
13	NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR
14	THE STATE OF
	My Commission Expires:
15	
16	
17	
18	
19	
20	
21	
22	
23	
24	
25	

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

```
Page 291
 1
                        CAUSE NO. DF-13-06713
 2
     IN THE INTEREST OF
                                       IN THE DISTRICT COURT
     L.L.C., IV
                                      256TH JUDICIAL DISTRICT
 3
     A CHILD
                                      DALLAS COUNTY, TEXAS
 4
                       REPORTER'S CERTIFICATION
 6
               ORAL DEPOSITION OF JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC
 7
                           OCTOBER 29, 2019
 8
         I, Amy Massey, Certified Shorthand Reporter in and for
 9
     the State of Texas, hereby certify to the following:
10
         That the witness, JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC, was duly sworn
     by the officer and that the transcript of the oral
     deposition is a true record of the testimony given by the
11
     parties;
12
         That the deposition transcript was submitted on
13
     December 5, 2019, to the witness or to the attorney for the
     witness for examination, signature and return to me by
     December 30, 2019;
14
15
         That the amount of time used by each party at the
     deposition is as follows:
16
     Mr. Randy J. Essenburg: 05:38
17
     Ms. Kris Balekian Hayes: 00:00
     Mr. Justin Whiddon: 00:00
     Mr. Earl S. Nesbitt: 00:06
18
19
         That pursuant to information given to the deposition
20
     officer at the time said testimony was taken, the following
     includes all parties of record:
21
     FOR THE PETITIONER, LAURISTON LEE CROCKETT, III:
22
         MR. RANDY J. ESSENBURG
23
         Attorney at Law
         4230 Lyndon B. Johnson Freeway
         Suite 320
24
         Dallas, Texas
                        75244
25
         972-789-1484
```

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

	Page 292
1	FOR THE RESPONDENT, NIKKI NGO:
2	MS. KRIS BALEKIAN HAYES
	MR. JUSTIN WHIDDON
3	Balekian Hayes, PLLC
	4144 North Central Expressway
4	Suite 1200
_	Dallas, Texas 75204
5	214-828-2800
_	kris@bh-pllc.com
6 7	jwhiddon@bh-pllc.com
8	FOR THE WITNESS, JENNIFER FRENDLE, LPC: MR. EARL S. NESBITT
8	Assistant District Attorney
9	Civil Division
	Criminal District Attorney's Office
10	Dallas County, Texas
	Administration Building
11	411 Elm Street
1.0	Fifth Floor
12	Dallas, Texas 75202
13	214-653-7358 Earl.Nesbitt@dallascounty.org
14	Earl: Nesbitt@darrascounty.org
1 7 7	I further certify that I am neither counsel for,
15	related to, nor employed by any of the parties or attorneys
	in the action in which this proceeding was taken, and
16	further that I am not financially or otherwise interested
	in the outcome of the action.
17	
1.0	Further Certification requirements pursuant to
18	Rule 203 of TRCP will be certified to after they have occurred.
19	occurred.
1	Certified to by me this 4th day of December, 2019.
20	I am Dona
21	111/0 X/D//(0)
	Amy Massey, Texas CSR 6254
22	Expiration Date: 1/3/1/21
	Amy Massey & Associates
23	HIPAA Certification
24	Firm Registration Number 404 6724 Kirk Lane
44	Burleson, Texas 76028
25	PHONE: 817-447-6721

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX

	Page 293
1	FURTHER CERTIFICATION UNDER RULE 203 TRCP
2	
3	The Original deposition was/was not returned to the deposition officer on
4	If returned, the attached Changes and Signature Page contains any changes and the reasons therefor;
5	If returned, the original deposition was delivered to
6	Mr. Randy J. Essenburg, Custodial Attorney;
7	That \$ is the deposition officer's charges to Petitioner for preparing the original deposition transcript
8	and any copies of exhibits;
9	That the deposition was delivered in accordance with Rule 203.3, and that a copy of this certificate was served
10	on all parties shown herein on and filed with the Clerk.
11	Certified to by me thisday of, 2019.
12	2019.
13	
14	Amy Massey, Texas CSR 6254 Expiration Date: 1/31/21 Amy Massey & Associates
15	HIPAA Certification Firm Registration Number 404
16	6724 Kirk Lane Burleson, Texas 76028
17	PHONE: 817-447-6721 FAX: 817-447-6491
18	
19	
20	
21	
22	
23	
24	
25	

Amy Massey & Associates 1-866-4MASSEY

817-447-6491 FAX